



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

Charles Revere
New Coll 1711

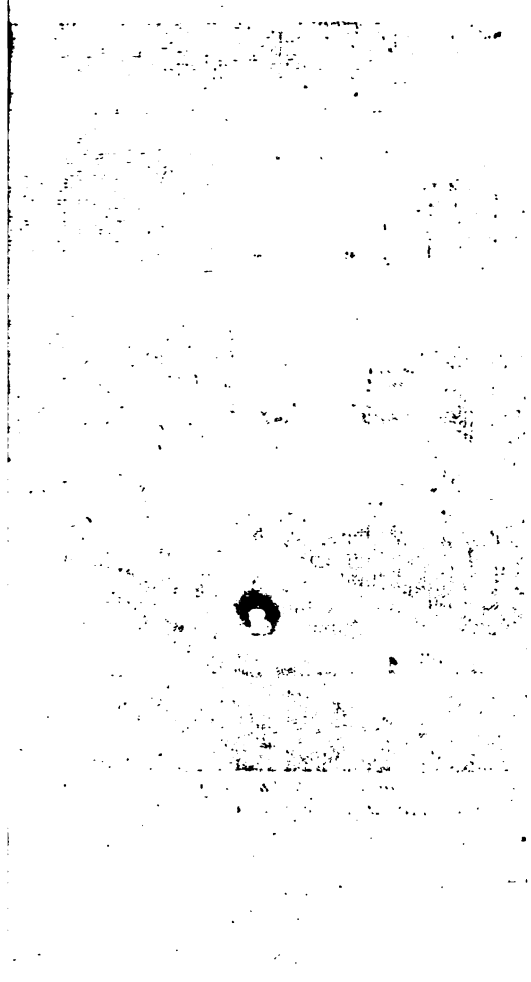
E LIBRIS
FRANCISCI HUTCHINSON
MDCCCLXXI-MCMXLVII

Parig.
8185.

XK18.1 [Par.]









*Three Poets in three distant Ages born—
Greece, Italy and England did adorn.
The First in loftiness of thought surpass'd;
The Next in Majesty, in both the Last.
The force of Nature cou'd no further goe:
To make a Third she joyn'd the Former two.*

Dryden

Paradise Lost.

Marshall's Mag. Hall Reford.

P O E M,

I N

T W E L V E B O O K S.

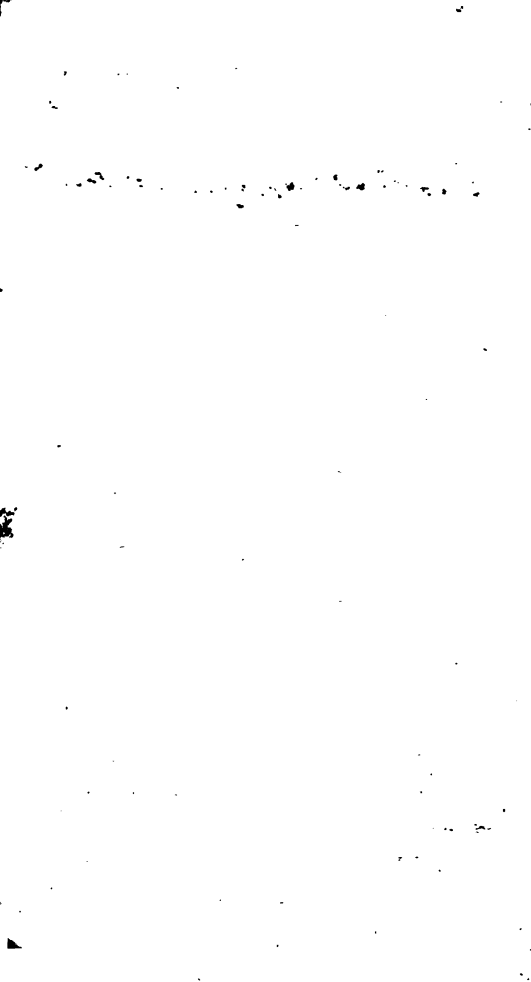
The A U T H O R

J O H N M I L T O N.

The N I N T H E D I T I O N, Adorn'd
with S C U L P T U R E S.

L O N D O N:

Printed for Jacob Tonson, at Shake-
spear's Head, over-against Catherine
Street in the Strand. MDCCXI.





To the Right Honourable

John Lord Sommers,
Baron of Evesham.

My LORD,

IT was Your Lordship's Opinion and Encouragement that occasion'd the first Appearing of this Poem in the *Folio* Edition, which from thence has been so well receiv'd, that notwithstanding the Price of it was Four times greater than before, the Sale encreas'd double

the Number every Year. The Work is now generally known and esteem'd; and I having the Honour to hear Your Lordship say, that a smaller Edition of it would be grateful to the World, immediately resolv'd upon Printing it in this Volume, of which I most humbly beg Your Acceptance, from,

My LORD,

Your Lordship's

Ever Obliged Servant.



I N

Paradisum Amissam

Summi Poetae

JOHANNIS MILTONI.

Qui legis *Amisssam Paradisum*, grandia magni
Carmina Miltoni, quid nisi cuncta legis?
Res cunctas, & cunctarum primordia rerum,
Et fata, & fines continet iste liber.
Intima panduntur magni penetralia mundi,
Scribitur & toto quicquid in Orbe latet.
Terraque, tractusque maris, columnae profundum
Sulphureumque Erebi, flammivomumque specus.
Quaque calunt terras, Pontumque & Tartara caeca,
Quaque colunt summi lucida regna Poli.
Et quodcumque ullis conclusum est finibus usquam
Et sine fine Chaos, & sine fine Deus:
Et sine fine magis, si quid magis est sine fine,
In Christo erga homines conciliatus amor.
Hac qui speraret quis crederet esse futurum?
Et tamen hac hodie terra Britanna legit.
O quantos in bella Duces! qua protulit arma?
Qua canit, & quanta praelia dira tuba.

*Cælestes acies! atque in certamine Cælum!
Et qua Cælestes pugna deceret agros!
Quantus in ætheriis tollit se Lucifer armis!
Atque ipso graditur vix Michaelc minor!
Quantis, & quam fune?is concurritur iris
Dum ferus hic stellas protegit, ille rapit!
Dum vulsos Montes cœu Tela reciproca torquent,
Et non mortali desuper igne pluuat:
Stat dubius cui se parti concedat Olympus,
Et metuit pugna non superesse sue.
At simul in cœlis Messia insignia fulgent,
Et currus animæ, armaque digna Deo,
Horrendumque rota strident, & sæva rotarum
Eriumpunt torvis fulgura luminibus,
Et flamma vibrant, & vera tonitrua rance
Admistis flammis insonuere Polo:
Excidit attonitis mens omnis, & impetus omnis
Et cassis dextris irrita Tela cadunt.
Ad pœnas fugiunt, & cœu foret Orcus asylum
Infernis certant condere se tenebris.
Cedite Romani Scriptores, cedite Graiæ
Et quos fama recens vel celebravit annis.
Hac quicumque leget tantum cecinesse putabit
Mæonidem ranas, Virgilium culices.*

S. B. M. D.

On Paradise Lost.

WHEN I beheld the Poet blind, yet bold,
In slender Book his vast Design unfold,
Messiah Crown'd, God's Reconcil'd Decree,
Rebelling Angels, the Forbidden Tree,
Heav'n, Hell, Earth, Chaos, All; the Argument
Held me a while misdoubting his Intent,
That he would ruine (for I saw him strong)
The sacred Truths to Fable and old Song.
(So *Sampson* groap'd the Temples Posts in spight)
The World o'erwhelming to revenge his sight.

Yet as I read, soon growing less severe,
I lik'd his Project, the success did fear;
Through that wide Field how he his way should find,
O'er which lame Faith leads Understanding blind;
Lest he perplex'd the things he would explain,
And what was easie he should render vain.

Or if a Work so infinite he spann'd,
Jealous I was that some less skilful hand
(Such as disquiet always what is well,
And by ill imitating would excell)
Might hence presume the whole Creation's day
To change in Scenes, and show it in a Play.

Pardon me, mighty Poet, nor despise
My causeless, yet not impious, surmise.
But I am now convinc'd, and none will dare
Within thy Labours to pretend a share.
Thou hast not mis'd one thought that could be fit,
And all that was improper dost omit:

So that no room is here for Writers left,
But to detect their Ignorance or Theft.

That Majesty which through thy Work doth **Reign**
Draws the Devout, deterring the Profane.
And things divine thou treat'st of in such state
As them preserves, and thee, inviolate.
At once delight and horror on us seize,
Thou sing'st with so much gravity and ease;
And above humane flight dost soar aloft
With Plume so strong, so equal, and so soft.
The Bird nam'd from that Paradise you sing
So never flags, but always keeps on Wing.

Where couldst thou words of such a compass find?
Whence furnish such a vast expence of mind?
Just Heav'n thee like *Tiresias* to requite
Rewards with Prophecie thy loss of sight.

Well might'st thou scorn thy Readers to allure
With tinkling Rhime, of thy own sense secure;
While the *Town-Bayes* writes all the while and spells
And like a Pack-horse tires without his Bells:
Their Fancies like our Busby-points appear,
The Poets tag them, we for fashion wear.
I too transported by the Mode offend,
And while I meant to Praise thee must Commend.
Thy Verse created like thy Theme sublime,
In Number, Weight and Measure, needs not Rhime.

Andrew Marvell.

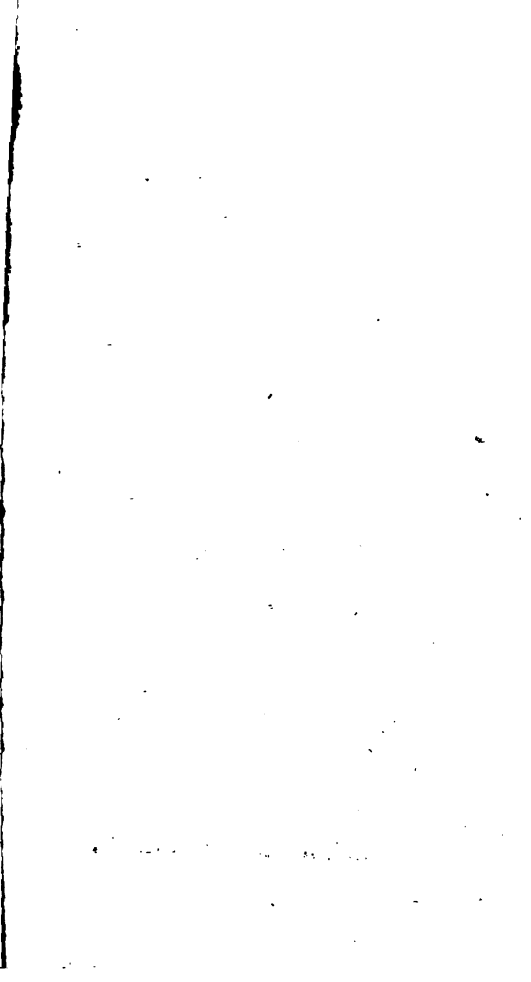


T H E V E R S E.

THE Measure is English Heroic Verse without Rime, as that of Homer in Greek, and of Virgil in Latin; Rime being no necessary Adjunct or true Ornament of Poem or good Verse, in longer Works especially, but the Invention of a barbarous Age, to set off wretched matter and lame Meeter.; grac'd indeed since by the use of some famous modern Poets, carried away by Custom, but much to their own vexation, hindrance, and constraint to express many things otherwise, and for the most part worse than else they would have express'd them. Not without cause therefore some, both Italian and Spanish

Poets of prime note have rejected Rime both in longer and shorter Works, as have also long since our best English Tragedies, as a thing of it self, to all judicious ears, trivial and of no true musical delight ; which consists only in apt Numbers, fit quantity of Syllables, and the sense variously drawn out from one Verse into another, not in the jingling sound of like endings, a fault avoided by the learned Ancients both in Poetry and all good Oratory. This neglect then of Rime so little is to be taken for a defect, though it may seem so perhaps to vulgar Readers, that it rather is to be esteem'd an example set, the first in English, of ancient liberty recover'd to Heroic Poem from the troublesom and modern bondage of Rimeing.

Para-





Lib. I.



Paradise Lost.

BOOK I.

The ARGUMENT.

This First Book proposes, first in brief, the whole Subject. *Man's Disobedience, and the loss thereupon of Paradise wherein he was plac'd: Then touches the prime Cause of his Fall, the Serpent, or rather Satan in the Serpent; who revolting from God, and drawing to his side many Legions of Angels, was by the Command of God driven out of Heaven with all his Crew into the great Deep. Which Action pass'd over, the Poem hastes into the midst of Things, presenting Satan with his Angels now fallen into Hell, describ'd here, not in the Center, (for Heaven and Earth may be suppos'd as yet not made, certainly not yet accurs'd) but in a*

Place of utter Darkness, fitliest call'd
 Chaos: Here Satan with his Angels
 lying on the burning Lake, thunder-
 struck and astonish'd, after a certain
 Space recovers, as from Confusion, calls
 up him who next in Order and Dignity
 lay by him; they confer of their mise-
 rable Fall. Satan awakens all his Le-
 gions, who lay 'till then in the same
 manner confounded: They rise, their
 Numbers, Array of Battel, their chief
 Leaders nam'd, according to the Idols
 known afterwards in Canaan and the
 Countries adjoining. To these Satan di-
 rects his Speech, comforts them with
 Hope yet of regaining Heaven, but tells
 them lastly of a new World and new
 kind of Creature to be created, accord-
 ing to an ancient Prophecy or Report
 in Heaven; for that Angels were long
 before this visible Creation, was the
 Opinion of many ancient Fathers. To
 find out the Truth of this Prophecy,
 and what to determine thereon, he re-
 fers to a full Council. What his Asso-
 ciates thence attempt. Pandemonium
 the Palace of Satan rises, suddenly
 built out of the Deep: The infernal
 Peers there sit in Council.

OF Man's First Disobedience, and the Fruit
Of that Forbidden Tree, whose mortal taste
Brought Death into the World and all our woe,
With loss of *Eden*, 'till one greater Man
Restore us, and regain the blissful Seat, 5
Sing Heav'nly Muse, that on the secret top
Of *Oreb*, or of *Sinai*, didst inspire
That Shepherd, who first taught the chosen Seed,
In the Beginning how the Heav'ns and Earth
Rose out of *Chaos*: Or if *Sion Hill* 10
Delight thee more, and *Siloa's Brook* that flow'd
Fast by the Oracle of God; I thence
Invoke thy Aid to my adventurous Song,
That with no middle flight intends to soar
Above th' *Aonian Mount*, while it pursues 15
Things unattempted yet in Prose or Rhime.
And chiefly Thou O Spirit, that dost prefer
Before all Temples th' upright Heart and pure,
Instruct me, for Thou know'st; Thou from the first
Wast present, and with mighty Wings out-spread 20
Dove-like sat'st brooding on the vast Abyss
And mad'st it pregnant: What in me is dark
Illumine, what is low raise and support;
That to the height of this great Argument
I may assert Eternal Providence, 25
And justify the ways of God to Men.

Say first, for Heav'n hides nothing from thy view
Nor the deep Tract of Hell, say first what cause
Mov'd our Grand Parents in that happy State,

4 PARADISE LOST, Book I.

Favour'd of Heav'n so highly, to fall off 30
 From their Creator, and transgress his Will
 For one Restraint, Words of the World besides?
 Who first seduc'd them to that foul revolt?
 Th' infernal Serpent; he it was, whose guile
 Stir'd up with Envy and Revenge, deceiv'd 35
 The Mother of Mankind, what time his Pride
 Had cast him out from Heav'n, with all his Host
 Of Rebel Angels, by whose aid aspiring
 To set himself in Glory above his Peers,
 He trusted to have equal'd the Most High, 40
 If he oppos'd; and with ambitious Aim,
 Against the Throne and Monarchy of God
 Rais'd impious War in Heav'n and Battel proud
 With vain Attempt. Him the Almighty Power
 Hurl'd headlong flaming from th' Ethereal Skie, 45
 With hideous ruine and combustion down
 To bottomless perdition, there to dwell
 In Adamantine Chains and penal Fire,
 Who durst defie th' Omnipotent to Arms.
 Nine times the Space that measures Day and Night
 To mortal men, he with his horrid Crew 50
 Lay vanquish'd, rowling in the fiery Gulf
 Confounded though immortal: But his Doom
 Reserv'd him to more wrath; for now the thought
 Both of lost happiness and lasting pain 55
 Torments him; round he throws his hateful eyes
 That witness'd huge affliction and dismay
 Mix'd with obdurate pride and stedfast hate:
 At once as far as Angels ken he views

The dismal Situation waste and wild, 60
 A Dungeon horrible, on all sides round
 As one great Furnace flam'd, yet from those flames
 No light, but rather darkness visible
 Serv'd only to discover sights of woe,
 Regions of sorrow, doleful shades, where peace 65
 And rest can never dwell, hope never comes
 That comes to all; but torture without end
 Still urges, and a fiery Deluge, fed
 With ever-burning Sulphur unconsum'd:
 Such Place Eternal Justice had prepar'd 70
 For those rebellious, here their Prison ordain'd
 In utter darkness, and their Portion set
 As far remov'd from God and light of Heav'n
 As from the Center thence to th' utmost Pole.
 O how unlike the place from whence they fell! 75
 There the companions of his fall, o'erwhelm'd
 With Floods and Whirlwinds of tempestuous fire,
 He soon discerns, and wett'ring by his side
 One next himself in power, and next in crime,
 Long after known in *Palestine*, and nam'd 80
Beelzebub. To whom th' Arch Enemy,
 And thence in Heav'n call'd *Satan*, with bold Words
 Breaking the horrid silence thus began.

If thou beest he; But O how fall'n! How chang'd
 From him, who in the happy Realms of light 85
 Cloath'd with transcendent brightness didst out-shine
 Myriads tho' bright! If he whom mutual League,
 United thoughts and counsels, equal hope
 And hazard in the Glorious Enterprize,

6 PARADISE LOST. Book I.

Join'd with me once, now misery hath join'd 90
 In equal ruin: Into what Pit thou seest
 From what height fall'n, so much the stronger prov'd
 He with his Thunder: And 'till then who knew
 The Force of those dire Arms? Yet not for those,
 Nor what the Potent Victor in his Rage 95
 Can else inflict, do I repent or change,
 Though chang'd in outward lustre; that fix'd mind
 And high disdain, from sense of injur'd merit,
 That with the mightiest rais'd me to contend,
 And to the fierce Contention brought along 100
 Innumerable force of Spirits arm'd
 That durst dislike his Reign, and me preferring,
 His utmost power with adverse power oppos'd
 In dubious Battel on the Plains of Heav'n,
 And shook his Throne. What tho' the field be lost?
 All is not lost; th' unconquerable Will, 106
 And study of Revenge, immortal hate,
 And courage never to submit or yield:
 And what is else not to be overcome?
 That Glory never shall his wrath or might 110
 Extort from me. To bow and sue for Grace
 With suppliant Knee, and deifie his Power,
 Who from the Terror of this Arm so late
 Doubted his Empire, that were low indeed,
 That were an Ignominy and Shame beneath 115
 This Downfal; since by Fate the Strength of Gods
 And this Empyrean Substance cannot fail,
 Since through Experience of this great Event
 In Arms not woric, in Foresight much advanc'd,

Book I. PARADISE LOST.

7

We may with more successful Hope resolve
To wage by Force or Guile Eternal War
Irreconcilable, to our grand Foe,

Who now triumphs, and in th' excess of Joy
Sole reigning holds the Tyranny of Heav'n.

So spake th'Apostate Angel, though in Pain, 125
Vaunting aloud, but rack'd with deep Despair:
And him thus answer'd soon his bold Compeer.

O Prince, O Chief of many Throned Powers,
That led th'imbattell'd Seraphim to War
Under thy Conduct, and in dreadful Deeds 130
Fearless, endanger'd Heav'n's perpetual King,

And put to Proof his high Supremacy,
Whether upheld by Strength, or Chance, or Fate,
Too well I see and rue the dire Event,
That with sad Overthrow and foul Defeat 135

Hath lost us Heav'n, and all this mighty Host
In horrible Destruction laid thus low,

As far as Gods and Heav'nly Essences
Can perish: For the Mind and Spirit remains
Invincible, and Vigour soon returns, 140

Though all our Glory extinct, and happy State
Here swallow'd up in endless Misery.

But what if he our Conqu'ror (whom I now
Of force believe Almighty, since no less 144
Than such could have o'er-power'd such Force as ours)

Have left us this our Spirit and Strength entire
Strongly to suffer and support our Pains,

That we may so suffice his vengeful Ire,
Or do him mightier Service as his thralls

8. PARADISE LOST. Book 1.

By Right of War, what'er his Business be 150
 Here in the Heart of Hell to work in Fire,
 Or do his Errands in the gloomy Deep:
 What can it then avail, though yet we feel
 Strength undiminish'd, or Eternal Being
 To undergo Eternal Punishment? 155
 Whereto with speedy Words th' Arch-Fiend reply'd.

Fall'n Chemb, to be weak is miserable
 Doing or Suffering: But of this be sure,
 To do ought good never will be our task,
 But ever to do ill our sole delight, 160
 As being the contrary to his high will
 Whom we resist. If then his Providence
 Out of our evil seek to bring forth good,
 Our labour must be to pervert that end,
 And out of good still to find Means of evil; 165
 Which oft times may succeed, so as perhaps
 Shall grieve him, if I fail not, and disturb
 His inmost Counsels from their destin'd aim.
 But see the angry Victor hath recall'd
 His Ministers of vengeance and pursuit 170
 Back to the Gates of Heav'n: The sulphureous Hail
 Shot after us in Storm, o'er-blown hath laid
 The fiery Surge, that from the Precipice
 Of Heav'n receiv'd us falling, and the Thunder,
 Wing'd with red Lightning and imperious rage, 175
 Perhaps hath spent his shafts, and ceases now
 To bellow through the vast and boundless Deep.
 Let us not slip th' occasion, whether scorn,
 Or satiate fury yield it from our Foe,

See'st thou yon dreary Plain, forlorn and wild, 180
 The Seat of desolation, void of light,
 Save what the glimmering of these livid flames
 Casts pale and dreadful? Thither let us tend
 From off the tossing of these fiery Waves,
 There rest, if any Rest can harbour there, 185
 And re-assembling our afflicted Powers,
 Consult how we may henceforth most offend
 Our Enemy, our own Loss how repair,
 How overcome this dire Calamity,
 What reinforcement we may gain from Hope, 190
 If not what resolution from despair.

Thus *Satan* talking to his nearest Mate
 With Head up-lift above the wave, and Eyes
 That sparkling blaz'd, his other Parts besides
 Prone on the Floud, extended long and large, 195
 Lay floating many a rood, in bulk as huge
 As whom the Fables name of monstrous size,
Titanian, or *Earth-born*, that warr'd on *Jove*,
Briareus or *Typhon*, whom the Den
 By ancient *Tarsus* held, or that Sea-beast 200
Leviathan, which God of all his works,
 Created hugest that swim th' Ocean stream:
 Him haply flum'ring on the *Norway* foam,
 The Pilot of some small night-founder'd Skiff,
 Deeming some Island, oft, as Sea-men tell, 205
 With fixed Anchor in his skaly rind,
 Moors by his Side under the Lee, while Night
 Invests the Sea, and wished Morn delays:
 So stretch't out huge in length the Arch-fiend lay.

Chain'd on the burning Lake, nor ever thence 210
 Had ris'n or heav'd his head, but that the will
 And high permission of all-ruling Heaven
 Left him at large to his own dark designs,
 That with reiterated crimes he might
 Heap on himself damnation, while he sought 215
 Evil to others, and enrag'd might see
 How all his malice serv'd but to bring forth
 Infinite goodness, grace and mercy shewn
 On Man by him seduc'd, but on himself
 Treble confusion, wrath and vengeance pour'd. 220
 Forthwith upright he rears from off the Pool
 His mighty Stature; on each hand the Flames
 Driv'n backward slope their pointing Spires, and
 In Billows, leave i'th'midst a horrid Vale. [rowl'd
 Then with expanded Wings he steers his flight 225
 Aloft, incumbent on the dusky Air
 That felt unusual Weight, 'till on dry Land
 He lights, if it were Land that ever burn'd
 With solid, as the Lake with liquid fire;
 And such appear'd in hue, as when the force 230
 Of subterranean Wind transports a Hill
 Torn from *Pelorus*, or the shatter'd side
 Of thund'ring *Ætna*, whose combustible
 And fuel'd entrails thence conceiving Fire,
 Sublim'd with Mineral fury, aid the Winds, 235
 And leave a sing'd bottom all involv'd
 With stench and smoak: Such Resting found the Soal
 Of unblest't feet. Him follow'd his next Mate,
 Both glorying to have 'scap'd the Stygian flood,

As Gods, and by their own recover'd strength, 240
Not by the Sufferance of ſupernal Power.

Is this the Region, this the Soil, the Clime,
Said then the loft Arch-Angel, this the Seat [gloom
That we muſt change for Heav'n, this mournful
For that Celeſtial Light ? Be it ſo, ſince he 245
Who now is Sov'rain can diſpoſe and bid
What ſhall be right : fardeſt from him is beſt
Whom Reaſon hath equal'd, Force hath made ſu-
Above his equals. Farewel happy Fields, [pream
Where Joy for ever dwells : Hail Horrors, hail 250
Infernal world, and thou profoundeſt Hell
Receive thy new Poſſeſſour : One who brings
A mind not to be chang'd by Place or Time.
The mind is its own place, and in it ſelf
Can make a Heav'n of Hell, a Hell of Heav'n. 255
What matter where, if I be ſtill the ſame,
And what I ſhould be, all but leſs than he
Whom Thunder hath made greater ? Here at leaſt
We ſhall be free ; th' Almighty hath not built
Here for his envy, will not drive us hence : 260
Here we may reign ſecure, and in my Choice
To reign is worth ambition tho' in Hell :
Better to reign in Hell, than ſerve in Heav'n.
But wherefore let we then our faithful Friends,
Th' associates and copartners of our loſs, 265
Lye thus aſtoniſh'd on th' oblivious Pool,
And call them not to ſhare with us their part
In this unhappy Manſion, or once more
With rallied Arms to try what may be yet

THE
H
I
I
T
A
T
H
W
A
O
T
O
A
S
A
W
O
B

Book 1. PARADISE LOST.

OF that inflamed Sea, he stood and call'd
His Legions, Angel Forms, who lay entrans't
Thick as Autumnal Leaves that strow the Brook
In Vall^{ies} ~~interfusa~~, where th' Euxurian Shades,
High over-arch'd embowr; or scatter'd sedge
Afloat, when with fierce Winds Orion arm'd
Hath vex'd the Red-Sea Coast, whose waves o'er
Bos^{phorus} and his Memphian Chivalry, [three
While with perfidious hatred they pursu'd
The Sojourners of Goshen, who beheld
From the safe Shoar their floating Carkases
And broken Chariot Wheels; so thick bestrown,
Abject and lost lay these, covering the Flood,
Under Amazement of their hideous change.
He call'd so loud, that all the hollow Deep
Of Hell resounded. Princes, Potentates,
Warriours, the Flow'r of Heav'n, once yours, now lost
If such astonishment as this can seize
Eternal Spirits; or have ye chos'n this place
After the toyl of Battel to repose
Your wearied vertue, for the ease you find
To slumber here, as in the Vales of Heav'n?
Or in this abject Posture have ye sworn
To adore the Conquerour? who now beholds
Cherub and Seraph rowling in the Flood,
With scatter'd Arms and Ensigns, 'till anon
His swift pursuers from Heav'n Gates discern
Th' advantage, and descending tread us down
Thus drooping, or with linked Thunderbolts
Transfix us to the Bottom of this Gulfe.

Awake, arise, or be for ever fall'n. 330

They heard, and were abasht, and up they sprung
Upon the wing, as when men wont to watch
On duty, sleeping found by whom they dread,
Rouse and bestir themselves e'er well awake.

Nor did they not perceive the evil plight 335

In which they were, or the fierce pains not feel;

Yet to their General's Voice they soon obey'd

Innumerable. As when the potent Rod

Of *Amram's* Son in *Egypt's* evil day

Wav'd round the Coast, up call'd a pitchy cloud 340

Of *Locusts*, warping on the Eastern Wind,

That o'er the Realm of impious *Pharaoh* hung

Like Night, and darken'd all the Land of *Nile*:

So numberless were those bad Angels seen

Hovering on wing under the Cope of Hell 345

'Twixt upper, nether, and surrounding Fires;

Till, as a signal giv'n, th' up-lifted Spear

Of their great Sultan waving to direct

Their course, in even ballance down they light

On the firm brimstone, and fill all the Plain; 350

A multitude, like which the populous North

Pour'd never from her frozen loyns, to pass

Rhene or the *Danaw*, when her barbarous Sons

Came like a Deluge on the South, and spread

Beneath *Gibraltar* to the *Lybian* sands. 355

Forthwith from every Squadron and each Band

The Heads and Leaders thither hast where stood

Their great Commander; God-like shapes and forms

Excelling human, Princely Dignities,

And Powers that earst in Heaven sat on Thrones;
 Tho' of their Names in Heav'nly Records now 361
 Be no memorial, blotted out and ras'd
 By their Rebellion, from the Books of Life.
 Nor had they yet among the Sons of Eve 364
 Got them new Names, 'till wand'ring o'er the Earth,
 Thro' God's high sufferance for the trial of man,
 By falsities and lyes the greatest part
 Of Mankind they corrupted to forsake
 God their Creator, and th' invisible
 Glory of him that made them, to transform 370
 Oft to the Image of a Brute, adorn'd
 With gay Religions full of Pomp and Gold,
 And Devils to adore for Deities ;
 Then were they known to Men by various Names,
 And various Idols thro' the Heathen World. 375
 Say, Muse, their Names then known, who first, who
 Rous'd from the slumber, on that fiery Couch, [last,
 At their great Emperors call, as next in worth,
 Came sing'y where he stood on the bare strand,
 While the promiscuous croud stood yet aloof? 380
 The chief were those who from the Fir of Hell
 Roaming to seek their prey on earth, durst fix
 Their Seats long after next the Seat of God,
 Their Altars by his Altar, Gods ador'd
 Among the Nations round, and durst abide 385
 Jehovah thund'ring out of *Sion*, thron'd
 Between the Cherubim ; yea, often plac'd
 Within his Sanctuary it self their Shrines,
 Abominations ; and with cursed Things

His holy Rites and solemn Feasts prophan'd, 390
 And with their darkness durst affront his light.
 First *Molech*, horrid King besmear'd with blood
 Of human sacrifice, and parents tears,
 Tho' for the noise of Drums and Timbrels loud
 Their childrens cries unheard, that pass thro' Fire 395
 To his grim Idol. Him the *Ammonite*
 Worshipp'd in *Rabba* and her watry Plain,
 In *Argob* and in *Basan*, to the stream
 Of utmost *Arnon*. Nor content with such
 Audacious neighbourhood, the wisest heart 400
 Of *Solomon* he led by fraud to build
 His Temple right against the Temple of God
 On the opprobrious Hill, and made his Grove
 The pleasant Vally of *Hinnon*, *Tophet* thence
 And black *Gehenna* call'd, the Type of Hell. 405
 Next *Chemos*, th' obscene dread of *Moab's* Sons,
 From *Aroar* to *Nebo*, and the wild
 Of Southmost *Abarim*; in *Hesebon*
 And *Heronaim*, *Seon's* Realm, beyond
 The flow'ry Dale of *Sibma* clad with Vines, 410
 And *Eleale* to th' *Asphaltick* Pool.
 Poor his other Name, when he entic'd
Israel in *Sittim* on their march from *Nile*,
 To do him wanton rites, which cost them woe.
 Yet thence his lustful Orgies he enlarg'd 415
 Even to that Hill of scandal, by the Grove
 Of *Molech* homicide, lust hard by hate;
 Till good *Josiah* drove them thence to Hell.
 With these came they, who from the bord'ring flood

Of old *Euphrates* to the Brook that parts 420
Egypt from *Syrian* ground, had general Names
 Of *Baalim* and *Astarte*, those Male,
 These Feminine. For Spirits when they please
 Can either Sex assume, or both; so soft
 And uncompounded is their Essence pure, 425
 Not ty'd or manac'd with joint or limb,
 Nor founded on the brittle strength of bones,
 Like cumbrous flesh; but in what shape they chuse
 Dilated or condens'd, bright or obscure,
 Can execute their airy purposes, 430
 And works of love or enmity fulfil.
 For those the Race of *Israel* oft forsook
 Their living Strength, and unrequited left
 His righteous Altar, bowing lowly down
 To bestial Gods; for which their heads as low 435
 Bow'd down in Battel, sunk before the Spear
 Of despicable foes. With these in troop
 Came *Astarte*, whom the *Phœnicians* call'd
Astarte, Queen of Heav'n, with crescent Horns;
 To whose bright Image nightly by the Moon 440
Sidonian Virgins paid their Vows and Songs,
 In *Sion* also not unsung, where stood
 Her Temple on th' offensive Mountain, built
 By that uxorious King, whose heart tho' large,
 Beguil'd by fair Idolatresses, fell 445
 To Idols foul. *Thammuz* came next behind,
 Whose annual Wound in *Lebanon* allur'd
 The *Syrian* Damsels to lament his fate
 In am'rous ditties all a Summer's day,

While smooth *Adonis* from his native Rock 450
 Ran purple to the Sea, suppos'd with blood
 Of *Thammuz* yearly wounded: the Love-tale
 Infected *Sion's* Daughters with like heat,
 Whose wanton Passions in the sacred Porch
Ezekiel saw, when by the Vision led 455
 His eye survey'd the dark Idolatries
 Of alienated *Judah*. Next came one
 Who mourn'd in earnest, when the Captive Ark
 Maim'd his brute Image, head and hands lopt off
 In his own Temple, on the grunsel edge, 460
 Where he fell flat, and sham'd his Worshipers:
Dagon his Name, Sea-Monster, upward Man
 And downward Fish: yet had his Temple high
 Rear'd in *Azotus*, dreaded through the Coast
 Of *Palestine*, in *Gath* and *Ascalon*, 465
 And *Accaron* and *Gaza's* frontier bounds.
 Him follow'd *Rimmon*, whose delightful Seat
 Was fair *Damascus*, on the fertile banks
 Of *Abbana* and *Pharphar*, lucid streams.
 He also against the House of God was bold: 470
 A Leper once he lost and gain'd a King,
Ahaz, his sottish Conquerour, whom he drew
 God's Altar to disparage and displace
 For one of *Syrian* mode, whereon to burn
 His odious off'rings, and adore the Gods 475
 Whom he had vanquish'd. After these appear'd
 A crew who under Names of old Renown,
Osiris, *Isis*, *Orus*, and their Train,
 With monstrous shapes and sorceries abus'd

Fanatick *Egypt* and her Priests, to seek 480
 Their wandring Gods disguis'd in brutish forms
 Rather than human. Nor did *Israel* 'scape
 Th' infection, when their borrow'd Gold compos'd
 The Calf in *Oreb* ; and the Rebel King
 Doubl'd that Sin in *Bethel* and in *Dan*, 485
 Lik'ning his Maker to the Grazed Ox,
Jehovah, who in one Night when he pass'd
 From *Egypt* marching, equall'd with one stroke
 Both her first-born and all her bleating Gods.
Belial came last, than whom a Spirit more lewd 490
 Fell not from Heaven, or more gross to love
 Vice for it self: To him no Temple stood,
 Or Altar smoak'd ; yet who more oft than he
 In Temples and at Altars, when the Priest
 Turns Atheist, as did *Ely's* Sons, who fill'd 495
 With lust and violence the house of God?
 In Courts and Palaces he also Reigns,
 And in luxurious Cities, where the noise
 Of riot ascends above their loftiest Towers,
 And injury and outrage: And when Night 500
 Darkens the Streets, then wander forth the Sons
 Of *Belial*, flown with insolence and wine.
 Witness the Streets of *Sodom*, and that night
 In *Gibeah*, when the hospitable door
 Expos'd a Matron to avoid worse rape. 505
 These were the prime in order and in might ;
 The rest were long to tell, tho' far renown'd,
 Th' *Ionian* Gods, of *Javan's* Issue held
 Gods, yet confess'd later than Heav'n and Earth

Their boasted Parents ; *Titan* Heav'n's first-born,
 With his enormous brood, and birthright seiz'd 515
 By younger *Saturn*, he from mightier *Jove*
 His own and *Rhea's* Son like measure found ;
 So *Jove* usurping reign'd : these first in *Crate*
 And *Ida* known, thence on the snowy top 515
 Of cold *Olympus* rul'd the middle Air,
 Their highest Heav'n ; or on the *Delphian* Cliff,
 Or in *Dadana*, and thro' all the bounds
 Of *Doric* Land ; or who with *Saturn* old
 Fle'd over *Adria* to the *Hesperian* Fields, 520
 And o'er the *Celtick* roam'd the utmost Mles.
 All these and more came flocking but with looks
 Down cast and damp, yet such wherein appear'd
 Obscure some glimpse of joy, to have found their chief
 Not in despair, to have found themselves not lost 525
 In loss it self ; which on his count'nance cast
 Like doubtful hue : but he his wonted pride
 Soon recollecting, with high words, that bore
 Semblance of worth, not substance, gently rais'd
 Their fainting courage, and dispell'd their fears. 530
 Then strait commands that at the warlike sound
 Of Trumpets loud and Clarions be uprear'd
 His mighty Standard ; that proud honour claim'd
Azazel as his Right, a Cherub tall :
 Who forthwith from the glittering Staff unfurl'd 535
 Th' Imperial Ensign, which full high advanc'd
 Shone like a Meteor streaming to the Wind ;
 With Gems and Golden Lustre rich imblaz'd
 Seraphic Arms and Trophies ; all the while

Sonorous metal blowing Martial Sounds : 540
 At which the universal Host up sent
 A shout that tore Hell's Concave, and beyond
 Frighted the Reign of Chaos and old Night.
 All in a moment thro' the gloom were seen
 Ten thousand Banners rise into the Air 545
 With orient Colours waving : with them rose
 A Forest huge of Spears ; and thronging Helms
 Appear'd, and serried Shields in thick array,
 Of depth immeasurable : Anon they move
 In perfect Phalanx to the *Dorian* mood 550
 Of Flutes and soft Records ; such as rais'd
 To height of noblest temper Hero's old
 Arming to Battel, and in stead of rage
 Deliberate valour breath'd, firm and unmov'd
 With dread of death to flight or soul retreat, 555
 Nor wanting power to mitigate and swage,
 With solemn touches, troubled thoughts, and chase
 Anguish and doubt and fear and sorrow and pain
 From mortal or immortal minds. Thus they
 Breathing united force with fixed thought 560
 Mov'd on in silence to soft Pipes that charm'd
 Their painful steps o'er the burnt soyl ; and now
 Advanc'd in view, they stand ; a horrid Front
 Of dreadful length and dazzling Arms, in guise
 Of Warriors old with order'd Spear and Shield, 565
 Awaiting what command their mighty Chief
 Had to impose : He thro' the armed Files
 Darts his experience'd eye, and soon traverse
 The whole Battalion views, their order due,

Their visages and stature as of Gods, 570
 Their number last he summs. And now his heart
 Distends with pride, and hard'ning in his strength
 Glories : For never since created man,
 Met such imbodied force, as nam'd with these
 Could merit more than that small infantry 575
 Warr'd on by Cranes; tho' all the Giant brood
 Of *Phlegra* with th' Heroick Race were join'd,
 That fought at *Theb's* and *Ilium*, on each side
 Mix'd with auxiliar Gods ; and what resounds
 In Fable or Romance of *Uther's* Son, 580
 Begirt with *British* and *Armoric* Knights ;
 And all who since, Baptiz'd or Infidel
 Jousted in *Aspramont* or *Montalban*,
Damasco, or *Marocco*, or *Trebisond*,
 Or whom *Biserta* sent from *Afric* Shoar 585
 When *Charlemain* with all his Peerage fell
 By *Fontarabbia*. Thus far these beyond
 Compare of mortal prowess, yet observ'd
 Their dread commander : he, above the rest
 In shape and gesture proudly eminent 590
 Stood like a Tow'r ; his Form had yet not lost
 All her Original brightness, nor appear'd
 Less than Arch-Angel ruin'd, and th' excess
 Of Glory obscur'd : As when the Sun new-ris'n,
 Looks thro' the Horizontal misty Air 595
 Shorn of his Beams, or from behind the Moon,
 In dim Eclipse, disastrous Twilight sheds
 On half the Nations, and with fear of Change
 Perplexes Monarchs. Darken'd so, yet shone

Above them all th' Arch-Angel: But his face 600
 Deep scars of Thunder had intrencht, and care
 Sat on his faded cheek, but under Brows

Of dauntless courage, and confid'rate Pride
 Waiting revenge: cruel his eye, but cast
 Signs of remorse and passion to behold 605

The fellows of his crime, the followers rather
 Far other once beheld in bliss) condemn'd
 For ever now to have their lot in pain,

Millions of Spirits for his fault amerc't
 Of Heav'n, and from Eternal Splendors flung 610
 For his revolt, yet faithful how they stood,

Their Glory wither'd. As when Heaven's Fire
 Hath scath'd the Forrest Oaks, or Mountain Pines,
 With singed top their stately growth tho' bare

Stands on the blasted Heath. He now prepar'd 615
 To speak; whereat their doubl'd Ranks they bend
 From wing to wing, and half inclose him round

With all his Peers: Attention held them mute.
 Thrice he assay'd, and thrice in spight of Scorn,
 Tears such as Angels weep, burst forth; at last 620

Words interwove with sighs found out their way.

O Myriads of immortal Spirits, O Powers
 Matchless, but with th' Almighty, and that strife
 Wa not inglorious, tho' th' event was dire,

As this place testifies, and this dire change, 625
 Hateful to utter: but what power of mind,
 Foreseeing or presaging, from the Depth

Of knowledge past or present, could have fear'd,
 How such united force of Gods, how such

As flood-like these, could ever know repulse? 634
 For who can yet believe, tho' after loss,
 That all these puissant Legions', whose exile
 Hath emptied Heav'n, shall fail to re-ascend
 Self-raisd, and re-possess their native seat?
 For me be witness all the Host of Heav'n 639
 If counsels different, or danger shun'd
 By me, have lost our hopes. But he who reigns
 Monarch in Heav'n, 'till then as one secure
 Sate on his Throne, upheld by old repute,
 Consent or custom, and his Regal State 644
 Put forth at full, but still his strength conceal'd,
 Which tempted our attempt; and wrought our fall.
 Henceforth his might we know, and know our own
 So as not either to provoke, or dread
 New war, provok't; our better part remains 649
 To work in close design, by fraud or guile,
 What force effected not: that he no less
 At length from us may find, who overcomes
 By force, hath overcome but half his foe.
 Space may produce new Worlds; whereof so rife 654
 There went a fame in Heav'n that he e'er long
 Intended to create, and therein plant
 A generation, whom his choice regard
 Should favour equal to the Sons of Heaven:
 Thither, if but to pry, shall be perhaps 659
 Our first Eruption, thither or elsewhere:
 For this Infernal Pit shall never hold
 Celestial Spirits in Bondage, nor th' Abyss
 Long under darkness cover. But these thoughts

Full

Full Counsel must mature: Peace is despair'd, 660
 For who can think Submission? War then, War
 Open or understood must be resolv'd.

He spake: and to confirm his words out-flew
 Millions of flaming Swords, drawn from the Thighs
 Of mighty Cherubim; the sudden blaze 665

Far round illumin'd Hell: highly they rag'd
 Against the Highest, and fierce with grasped Arms
 Clash'd on their sounding Shields the din of war,
 Hurling defiance toward the Vault of Heav'n.

There stood a Hill not far, whose grisly Top 670
 Belch'd fire and rowling smoak; the rest entire
 Shone with a glossy scurf, undoubted sign

That in his womb was hard metallick Ore,
 The work of Sulphur. Thither wing'd with speed
 A numerous brigad hasten'd. As when Bands 675

Of Pioneers with Spade and Pickax arm'd
 Fore-run the Royal Camp, to trench a Field,
 Or cast a Rampart. *Mammon* led them on,

Mammon, the least erected Spirit that fell
 From Heav'n, for e'en in Heav'n his looks and thoughts
 Were always downward bent, admiring more 681

The riches of Heav'n's pavement, trodden Gold,
 Than aught divine or holy else enjoy'd

In vision beatifick: by him first

Men also, and by his suggestion taught, 685
 Ranfack'd the Center, and with impious hands

Rifled the Bowels of their mother Earth

For Treasures better hid. Soon had his crew

Open'd into the Hill a spacious wound,

And dig'd out ribs of Gold. Let none admire 690
 That riches grow in Hell; that soyle may best
 Deserve the precious bane. And here let those
 Who boast in mortal things, and wond'ring tell
 Of *Babel*, and the works of *Memphian* Kings,
 Learn how their greatest Monuments of Fame, 695
 And Strength and Art are easily out-done
 By Spirits reprobate, and in an hour
 What in an age they with incessant toyle
 And hands innumerable scarce perform.
 Nigh on the Plain in many cells prepar'd, 700
 That underneath had veins of liquid fire
 Sluc'd from the Lake, a second multitude
 With wondrous Art found out the massy Ore,
 Severing each kind, and scum'd the Bullion dross:
 A third as soon had form'd within the^u ground 705
 A various mould, and from the boiling cells
 By strange conveyance fill'd each hollow nook,
 As in an Organ from one blast of Wind
 To many a row of Pipes the sound-board breaths.
 Anon out of the Earth a Fabrick huge 710
 Rose like an Exhalation, with the sound
 Of dulcet Symphonies and voices sweet,
 Built like a Temple where *Pilasters* round
 Were set, and Doric Pillars overlaid
 With golden Architrave; nor did there want 715
 Cornice or Freeze, with bossy Sculptures grav'n,
 The Roof was fretted Gold. Not *Babylon*,
 Nor great *Alcairo* such magnificence
 Equall'd in all their glories, to inshrine

Book I. PARADISE LOST. 27

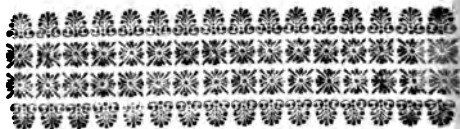
Belus or *Serapis* their Gods, or seat 720
 Their Kings, when *Ægypt* with *Assyria* strove
 In wealth and luxury. Th' ascending pile
 Stood fixt her stately heighth, and streight the doors
 Op'ning their brazen folds discover wide
 Within her ample spaces, o'er the smooth 725
 And level pavement: from the arched roof,
 Pendent by subtle Magic, many a row
 Of Starry Lamps and blazing Cressets, fed
 With *Naphtha* and *Asphaltus*, yielded light
 As from a Sky. The hasty multitude 730
 Admiring enter'd, and the work some praise
 And some the Architect: his hand was known
 In Heav'n by many a Towred structure high,
 Where Sceptred Angels held their residence,
 And safe as Princes, whom the supreme King 735
 Exalted to such power, and gave to rule,
 Each in his Hierarchy, the Orders bright.
 Nor was his name unheard or unador'd
 In ancient *Greece*; and in *Ausonian* Land
 Men call'd him *Mulciber*; and how he fell 740
 From Heav'n, they fabled thrown by angry *Jove*
 Sheer o'er the Chrystal Battlements; from Morn
 To Noon he fell, from Noon to dewy Eve,
 A Summer's day; and with the setting Sun
 Dropt from the Zenith like a falling Star, 745
 On *Lemnos* th' *Ægean* Isle: thus they relate,
 Erring; for he with this rebellious rout
 Fell long before; nor aught avail'd him now
 T' have built in Heav'n high Towers; nor did he scape

By all his Engins, but was headlong sent 750
 With his industrious crew to build in Hell.
 Mean while the winged Heralds by command
 Of Sov'reign Pow'r, with awful Ceremony
 And Trumpets sound, throughout the Host proclaim
 A solemn Council forthwith to be held 755
 At *Pandemonium*, the high Capital
 Of Satan and his Peers: their summons call'd
 From every Band and squared Regiment
 By place or choice the worthiest; they anon
 With hundreds and with thousands trooping came
 Attended: all access was throng'd, the gates 761
 And Porches wide, but chief the spacious Hall
 (Though like a cover'd Field, where Champions bold
 Wont ride in arm'd, and at the Soldan's Chair
 Defi'd the best of *Panims* Chivalry 765
 To mortal Combat, or carriere with Lance)
 Thick swarm'd, both on the ground and in the air,
 Brush'd with the hiss of rustling Winds. As Bees
 In Spring time, when the Sun with *Taurus* rides,
 Pour forth their populous youth about the Hive 770
 In clusters; they among fresh Dews and Flowers
 Fly to and fro, or on the smoothed Plank,
 The Suburb of their Straw-built Cittadel,
 New rubb'd with Baum, expatiate and confer
 Their State affairs. So thick the aery crowd 775
 Swarm'd and were straitn'd; till the Signal giv'n.
 Behold a wonder! they but now who seem'd
 In Bigness to surpass Earth's Giant Sons
 Now less than smallest Dwarfs, in narrow room

BOOK I. PARADISE LOST.

Throng numberless, like that Pigmean Race
Beyond the *Indian Mount*, or Faery Elves,
Whose midnight Revels, by a Forest side
Or Fountain some belated Peasant sees,
Or dreams he sees, while over-head the Moon
Sits Arbitress, and nearer to the Earth
Wheels her pale course, they on their mirth and
Intent, with jocund Music charm his Ear;
At once with joy and fear his heart rebounds
Thus incorporeal Spirits to smallest forms
Reduc'd their Shapes immense, and were at large
Though without number still amidst the Hall
Of that infernal Court: But far within,
And in their own dimensions like themselves,
The great Seraphick Lords and Cherubim,
In close recess and secret conclave sat
A thousand Demy Gods on golden seats,
Frequent and full. After short silence then
And summons read, the great Consult began

The End of the First Book.



Paradise Lost.

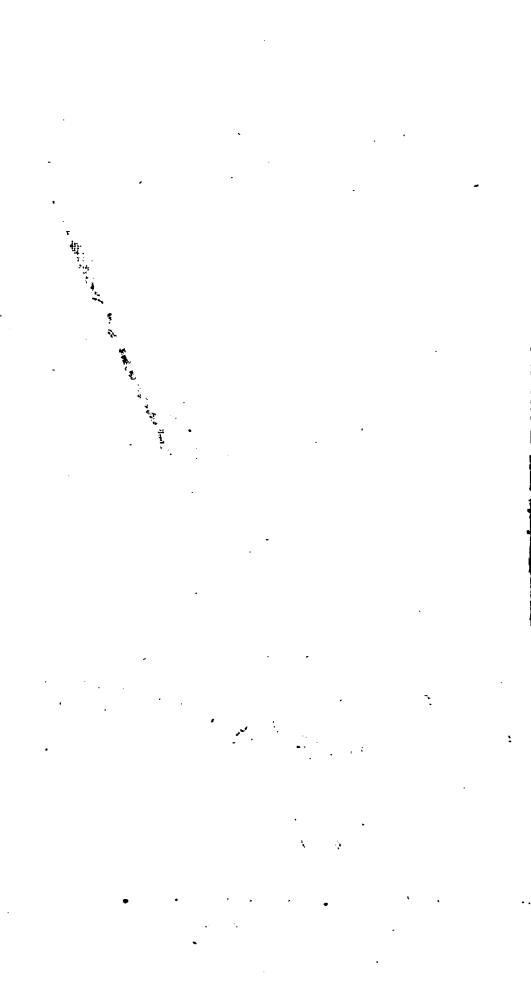
BOOK II.

The ARGUMENT.

The Consultation begun, Satan debates whether another Battel be to be hazarded for the recovery of Heaven : some advise it, others dissuade : A third proposal is preferr'd, mention'd before by Satan, to search the truth of that Prophecy or Tradition in Heaven concerning another World, and another kind of Creature, equal, or not much inferiour to themselves, about this time to be created : Their doubt who shall be sent on this difficult search : Satan their Chief



Lib. II,



undertakes alone the Voyage, is honour'd and applauded. The Council thus ended, the rest betake them several ways, and to several imployments, as their inclinations lead them, to entertain the time 'till Satan return. He passes on his Journey to Hell Gates, finds them shut, and who sat there to guard them, by whom at length they are open'd, and discover to him the Gulf between Hell and Heaven; with what difficulty he passes through, directed by Chaos, the Power of that place, to the sight of this new World which he sought.

HIGH on a Throne of Royal State, which far
 Outshone the wealth of *Ormus* and of *Ind*,
 Or where the gorgeous East with richest hand
 Shows on her Kings *Barbaric* Pearl and Gold,
Satan exalted sat, by merit rais'd 5
 To that bad eminence; and from despair
 Thus high uplifted beyond hope, aspires
 Beyond thus high, insatiate to pursue
 Vain War with Heav'n, and by success untaught
 His proud imaginations thus display'd. 10

Powers and Dominions, Deities of Heav'n,
 For since no deep within her gulph can hold
 Immortal vigour, though oppress'd and fall'n,
 I give not Heav'n for lost. From this descent
 Celestial virtues rising, will appear 15
 More glorious and more dread than from no fall,
 And trust themselves to fear no second fate:
 Me though just right, and the fix'd Laws of Heav'n
 Did first create your Leader, next free choice,
 With what besides, in Council or in Fight, 20
 Hath been achiev'd of merit, yet this loss
 Thus far at least recover'd, hath much more
 Establish'd in a safe unenvied Throne,
 Yielded with full consent. The happier state
 In Heav'n, which follows dignity, might draw 25
 Envy from each inferiour; but who here
 Will envy whom the highest place exposes
 Foremost to stand against the Thunderer's aim
 Your bulwark, and condemns to greatest share

Book II. PARADISE LOST.

Of endless pain? Where there is then no go
For which to strive, no strife can grow up th
From Faction; for none sure will claim in H
Precedence; none, whose portion is so sm
Of present pain, that with ambitious mind
Will covet more. With this advantage the
To union, and firm Faith, and firm accord,
More than can be in Heav'n, we now return
To claim our just inheritance of old,
Surer to prosper than prosperity

Could have assur'd us; and by what best w
Whether of open War or covert guile,
We now debate; who can advise may speak

He ceas'd, and next him *Moloch*, sceptred
Stood up, the strongest and the fiercest Spirit
That fought in Heav'n, now fiercer by despa
His trust was with th' Eternal to be deem'd
Equal in strength, and rather than be less
Car'd not to be at all; with that care lost
Went all his fear: of God, or Hell, or wo
He reck'd not; and these words hereafter sp

My sentence is for open War: of Wiles
More unexpert, I boast not: them let thos
Contrive who need, or when they need, n
For while they sit contriving, shall the res
Millions that stand in Arms, and longing
The Signal to ascend, sit ling'ring here.

Heav'n's fugitives, and for their dwelling p
Accept this dark opprobrious Den of sham
The Prison of his Tyranny who reigns

By our delay? no, let us rather chuse, 60
 Arm'd with Hell flames and fury, all at once
 O'er Heav'n's high Towers to force resistless way,
 Turning our Tortures into horrid Arms
 Against the Torturer; when to meet the noise
 Of his Almighty Engine he shall hear 65
 Infernal Thunder, and for Lightning see
 Black fire and horror shot with equal rage
 Among his Angels; and his Throne it self
 Mixt with *Tartarean* Sulphur, and strange fire,
 His own invented Torments. But perhaps 70
 The way seems difficult and steep, to scale
 With upright wing against a higher foe.
 Let such bethink them, if the sleepy drench
 Of that forgetful Lake benumb not still,
 That in our proper motion we ascend 75
 Up to our native seat: descent and fall
 To us is adverse. Who but felt of late
 When the fierce Foe hung on our broken Rere
 Insulting and pursu'd us through the Deep,
 With what compulsion and laborious flight 80
 We sunk thus low? Th' ascent is easie then;
 Th' event is fear'd; should we again provoke
 Our stronger, some worse way his wrath may find
 To our destruction: if there be in Hell
 Fear to be worse destroy'd: what can be worse 85
 Than to dwell here, driv'n out from Bliss, condemn'd
 In this abhorred Deep to utter woe;
 Where pain of unextinguishable fire
 Must exercise us without hope of end

The Vassals of his anger, when the Scourge 90
Inexorably, and the torturing hour

Calls us to Penance? More destroy'd than thus
We should be quite abolish'd and expire.

What fear we then? what doubt we to incense
His utmost Ire? which to the heighth enrag'd, 95

Will either quite consume us, and reduce

To nothing this essential, happier far
Than miserable to have eternal being:

Or if our substance be indeed Divine,
And cannot cease to be, we are at worst 100

On this side nothing; and by proof we feel

Our power sufficient to disturb his Heav'n,

And with perpetual inroads to alarm,

Though inaccessible, his fatal Throne:

Which, if not Victory, is yet Revenge. 105

He ended frowning, and his look denounc'd
Desperate revenge, and Battel dangerous

To less than Gods. On th'other side up rose
Belial, in act more gracefull and humane;

A fairer person lost not Heav'n; he seem'd 110
For dignity compos'd and high exploit:

But all was false and hollow; though his Tongue
Dropt Manna, and could make the worse appear

The better Reason, to perplex and dash

Maturest Counsels: for his Thoughts were low; 115
To Vice industrious, but to Nobler deeds

Tim'rous and slothful: yet he pleas'd the Ear,
And with persuasive accent thus began.

I should be much for open War, O Peers

As not behind in hate, if what was urg'd 120
Main reason to persuade immediate War,
Did not dissuade me most, and seem to cast
Ominous conjecture on the whole success:
When he who most excels in fact of Arms,
In what he counsels and in what excels 125
Mistrustful, grounds his courage on despair
And utter dissolution, as the scope
Of all his aim, after some dire revenge.
First, what Revenge? the Towers of Heav'n are fill'd
With armed Watch, that render all access 130
Impregnable; oft on the bordering Deep
Encamp their Legions, or with obscure wing
Scout far and wide into the realm of night,
Scorning surprize. Or could we break our way
By force, and at our heels all Hell should rise 135
With blackest Insurrection, to confound
Heav'n's purest Light, yet our great Enemy
All incorruptible would on his Throne
Sit unpolluted, and th'Ethereal mold
Incapable of stain would soon expell 140
Her mischief, and purge off the baser fire
Victorious. Thus repuls'd, our final hope
Is flat despair: we must exasperate
Th' Almighty Victor to spend all his rage,
And that must end us, that must be our cure 145
To be no more; sad cure; for who would lose,
Though full of pain, this intellectual being,
Those thoughts that wander through Eternity;
To perish rather, swallow'd up and lost

In the wide womb of uncreated night, 150
 Devoid of sense and motion? and who knows,
 Let this be good, whether our angry Foe
 Can give it, or will ever; how he can
 Is doubtfull; that he never will is sure.
 Will he, so wise, let loose at once his ire, 155
 Belike through Impotence, or unaware,
 To give his Enemies their wish, and end
 Them in his anger, whom his anger saves
 To punish endless? wherefore cease we then?
 Say they who counsel War, we are decreed, 160
 Reserv'd, and destin'd to eternal woe;
 Whatever doing, what can we suffer more,
 What can we suffer worse? is this then worst,
 Thus sitting, thus consulting, thus in Arms?
 What when we fled amain, pursu'd and strook 165
 With Heav'n's afflicting Thunder, and besought
 The Deep to shelter us; this Hell then seem'd
 A refuge from those wounds: or when we lay
 Chain'd on the burning Lake? that sure was worse.
 What if the breath that kindl'd those grim fires 170
 Awak'd should blow them into sevenfold rage
 And plunge us in the flames? or from above
 Should intermitted Veng'ance arm again
 His red right hand to plague us? what if all
 Her stores were open'd, and this Firmament 175
 Of Hell should spout her Cataracts of Fire,
 Impendent horrors, threatening hideous fall
 One day upon our heads; while we perhaps
 Desiguing or exhorting glorious war,

Caught in a fiery Tempest shall be hurl'd 180
 Each on his Rock transfixt, the sport and prey
 Of racking whirlwinds, or for ever sunk
 Under yon boyling Ocean, wrapt in Chains;
 There to converse with everlasting groans,
 Unrespited, unpitied, unrepriev'd, 185
 Ages of hopeless end? this would be worse.
 War therefore, open or conceal'd, alike
 My voice dissuades; for what can force or guile
 With him, or who deceive his mind, whose eye
 Views all things at one view? he from Heav'n's height
 All these our motions vain sees and derides; 190
 Not more Almighty to resist our might
 Than wise to frustrate all our plots and wiles.
 Shall we then live thus vile, the race of Heav'n
 Thus trampil'd, thus expell'd to suffer here 195
 Chains and these Torments? better these than worse
 By my advice; since fate inevitable
 Subdues us, and omnipotent Decree,
 The Victor's Will. To suffer, as to doe,
 Our strength is equal, nor the Law unjust 200
 That so ordains: This was at first resolv'd
 If we were wise, against so great a foe
 Contending, and so doubtful what might fall.
 I laugh, when those who at the Spear are bold
 And vent'rous, if that fail them, shrink and fear 205
 What yet they know must follow, to endure
 Exile, or ignominy, or bonds, or pain,
 The sentence of their Conqu'ror: This is now
 Our doom; which if we can sustain and bear,

Our supreme Foe, in time may much remit 210
 His anger, and perhaps thus far remov'd
 Not mind us not offending, satisfi'd
 With what is punish'd ; whence these raging fires
 Will flaken, if his breath stir not their Flames.

Our purer essence then will overcome 215
 Their noxious vapour, or enur'd not feel,
 Or chang'd at length, and to the place conform'd
 In temper and in nature, will receive
 Familiar the fierce heat, and void of Pain ;
 This horror will grow mild, this darkness light, 220
 Besides what hope the never-ending flight
 Of future days may bring, what chance, what change
 Worth waiting, since our present lot appears
 For happy though but ill, for ill not worst,
 If we procure not to our selves more woe. 225

Thus *Belial* with words cloath'd in Reason's garb
 Counsel'd ignoble ease, and peaceful sloth,
 Not peace : and after him thus *Mammon* spake.

Either to disenthroned the King of Heav'n
 We war, if war be best, or to regain 230
 Our own right lost : him to unthrone we then
 May hope when everlasting Fate shall yield
 To fickle Chance, and *Chaos* judge the strife :
 The former vain to hope argues as vain
 The latter : for what place can be for us 235
 Within Heav'n's bound, unless Heav'n's Lord suprem
 We overpower ? Suppose he should relent
 And publish Grace to all, on promise made
 Of new Subjection ; with what eyes could we

Stand in his presence humble, and receive 240
Strict Laws impos'd, to celebrate his Throne
With warbled Hymns, and to his Godhead sing
Forc'd Halleluiah's; while he Lordly sits
Our envi'd Sov'reign, and his Altar breathes
Ambrosial Odours and Ambrosial Flowers, 245
Our servile offerings. This must be our Task
In Heav'n, this our delight; how wearisome
Eternity so spent in worship paid
To whom we hate. Let us not then pursue
By force impossible, by leave obtain'd 250
Unacceptable, though in Heav'n, our state
Of splendid vassalage, but rather seek
Our own good from our selves, and from our own
Live to our selves, though in this vast recess,
Free, and to none accountable, preferring 255
Hard liberty before the easie yoke
Of servile Pomp. Our greatness will appear
Then most conspicuous, when great things of small,
Useful of hurtful, prosperous of adverse
We can create, and in what place so e'er 260
Thrive under evil, and work ease out of pain
Through labour and indurance. This deep world
Of darkness do we dread? How oft amidst
Thick cloud and dark doth Heav'n's all-ruling Sire
Chuse to reside, his Glory unobscur'd, 265
And with the Majesty of darkness round
Covers his Throne; from whence deep thunders roar
Must'ring their rage, and Heav'n resembles Hell?
As he our darkness, cannot we his Light

mitate when we please? This desert soil 270
 Wants not her hidden lustre, Gems and Gold;
 Nor want we skill or art, from whence to raise
 Magnificence; and what can Heav'n shew more?
 Our torments also may in length of time
 Become our Elements, these piercing Fires 275
 As soft as now severe, our temper chang'd
 Into their temper; which must needs remove
 The sensible of pain. All things invite
 To peaceful Counsels, and the settl'd State
 Of order, how in safety best we may 280
 Compose our present evils, with regard
 Of what we are and were, dismissing quite
 All thoughts of war: ye have what I advise.

He scarce had finish'd, when such murmur fill'd
 Th' Assembly, as when hollow Rocks retain 285
 The sound of blustering winds, which all night long
 Had rouz'd the Sea, now with hoarse cadence lull
 Sea-faring men o'rewatch'd, whose Bark by chance
 Or Pinace anchors in a craggy Bay
 After the Tempest: Such applause was heard 290
 As *Mammon* ended, and his Sentence pleas'd,
 Advising peace: For such another Field
 They dreaded worse than Hell: So much the fear
 Of Thunder and the Sword of *Michael*
 Wrought still within them; and no less desire 295
 To found this nether Empire, which might rise
 By policy, and long process of time,
 In emulation opposite to Heav'n.
 Which when *Beelzebub* perceiv'd, than whom,

Satan except, none higher sat, with grave 30
 Aspect he rose, and in his rising seem'd
 A Pillar of State; deep on his Front engraven
 Deliberation sat and public Care;
 And Princely counsel in his face yet shone,
 Majestic though in ruin: sage he stood 305
 With *Atlantean* shoulders fit to bear
 The weight of mighty Monarchies; his look
 Drew audience and attention still as Night
 Or Summers Noon-tide air, while thus he spake.

Thrones and Imperial Powers, off-spring of heav'n
 Ethereal Vertues; or these Titles now 315
 Must we renounce, and changing stile be call'd
 Princes of Hell? for so the popular vote
 Inclines, here to continue, and build up here
 A growing Empire; doubtless; while we dream, 315
 And know not that the King of Heav'n hath doom'd
 This place our dungeon, not our safe retreat
 Beyond his Potent arm, to live exempt
 From Heav'n's high Jurisdiction, in new League
 Banded against his Throne, but to remain 320
 In strictest bondage, though thus far remov'd,
 Under th'inevitable curb, reserv'd
 His captive multitude: For he, be sure,
 In height or depth, still first and last will Reign
 Sole King, and of his Kingdom lose no part 325
 By our revolt, but over Hell extend
 His Empire, and with Iron Scepter rule
 Us here, as with his Golden those in Heav'n
 What fit we then projecting Peace and War?

hath determin'd us, and foil'd with less 330
 parable; terms of peace yet none
 satisf'd or sought; for what Peace will be giv'n
 us enslav'd, but custody severe,
 stripes, and arbitrary punishment
 exact? and what peace can we return? 335
 to our power hostility and hate,
 arm'd reluctance; and revenge though slow,
 ever plotting how the Conqueror least
 may reap his conquest, and may least rejoice
 in doing what we most in suffering feel? 340
 We will occasion want, nor shall we need
 such dangerous expedition to invade
 heav'n, whose high walls fear no Assault or Siege,
 ambush from the Deep. What if we find
 some easier enterprize? There is a place 345
 of ancient and prophetic fame in Heav'n
 or not) another World, the happy seat
 of some new Race call'd *Man*, about this time
 to be created like to us, though less
 in power and excellence, but favour'd more 350
 of him who rules above; so was his will
 pronounc'd among the Gods, and by an Oath,
 That shook Heav'n's whole circumference, confirm'd.
 Thither let us bend all our thoughts, to learn
 What creatures there inhabit, of what mould, 355
 Or substance, how endu'd, and what their Power,
 And where their weakness, how attempted best,
 By force or subtlety: Though Heav'n be shut,
 And Heav'n's high Arbitrator sit secure

In his own strength, this place may lye expos'd
 The utmost border of his Kingdom, left
 To their defence who hold it : here perhaps
 Some advantagious act may be atchiev'd
 By sudden onset, either with Hell fire
 To waſt his whole Creation, or poſſeſs
 All as our own, and drive as we were driven,
 The punie habitants, or if not drive,
 Seduce them to our Party, that their God
 May prove their foe, and with repenting hand
 Aboliſh his own works. This would ſurpaſs 37
 Common Revenge, and interrupt his joy
 In our confuſion, and our Joy upraiſe
 In his diſturbance ; when his darling Sons
 Hurl'd headlong to partake with us, ſhall curſe
 Their frail Original, and faded bliſs, 37
 Faded ſo ſoon. Adviſe if this be worth
 Attempting, or to ſit in darkneſs here
 Hatching vain Empires. Thus *Beelzebub*
 Pleaded his devilish Counſel, firſt devis'd
 By *Satan*, and in part propos'd : for whence, 38
 But from the Author of all ill could ſpring
 So deep a malice to confound the race
 Of mankind in one root, and Earth with Hell
 To mingle and involve, done all to ſpite
 The great Creatour ? But their ſpite ſtill ſerves 39
 His glory to augment. The bold deſign
 Pleas'd highly thoſe infernal States, and joy
 Sparkl'd in all their eyes ; with full aſſent
 They vote : whereat his ſpeech he thus renews,

Well have ye judg'd, well ended long debate, 390
 God of Gods, and like to what ye are,
 Great things resolv'd, which from the lowest deep
 Will once more lift us up, in spite of Fate,
 Leave our ancient Seat; perhaps in view 394
 Of those bright confines, whence with neighbouring
 And opportune excursion we may chance [Arms
 Re-enter Heav'n; or else in some mild Zone
 Well not unvisited of Heav'n's fair Light
 Secure, and at the brightning Orient beam
 Surge off this gloom; the soft delicious Air, 400
 To heal the scar of these corrosive Fires
 Shall breathe her balm. But first whom shall we send
 In search of this new world, whom shall we find
 Sufficient? who shall tempt with wandring feet
 The dark unbottom'd infinite Abyss, 405
 And through the palpable obscure find out
 His uncouth way, or spread his aery flight
 Upborn with indefatigable wings
 Over the vast abrupt, e'er he arrive
 The happy Isle; what strength, what art can then 410
 Suffice, or what evasion bear him safe
 Through the strict Sentries and Stations thick
 Of Angels watching round? Here he had need
 All circumspection, and we now no less
 Choice in our suffrage; for on whom we send, 415
 The weight of all and our last hope relies.

This said, he sat; and expectation held
 His look suspense, awaiting who appear'd
 To second, or oppose, or undertake

The perilous attempt : But all sat mute,
 Pondering the danger with deep thoughts ; and
 In others count'nance read his own dismay
 Astonisht : none among the choice and prime
 Of those Heav'n-warring Champions could be found
 So hardy as to proffer or accept
 Alone the dreadful voyage ; till at last
Satan, whom now transcendent glory rais'd
 Above his fellows, with Monarchal pride
 Conscious of highest worth, unmov'd thus spake.

O Progeny of Heav'n, Empyrean Thrones, 43
 With reason hath deep silence and demurr
 Seis'd us, though undismay'd : long is the way
 And hard, that out of Hell leads up to light ;
 Our prison strong, this huge convex of Fire,
 Outragious to devour, immures us round 435
 Ninefold, and gates of burning Adamant
 Barr'd over us prohibit all egress.
 These past, if any pass, the void profound
 Of unessential Night receives him next
 Wide gaping, and with utter loss of being 440
 Threatens him, plung'd in that abortive gulf.
 If thence he scape into whatever world,
 Or unknown Region, what remains him less
 Than unknown dangers, and as hard escape ?
 But I should ill become this Throne, O Peers, 445
 And this Imperial Sov'reignty, adorn'd
 With splendor, arm'd with power, if ought propos'd
 And judg'd of public moment, in the shape
 Of difficulty or danger could deter

From attempting. Wherefore do I assume 450
 These Royalties, and not refuse to Reign,
 Refusing to accept as great a share
 Of hazard as of honour, due alike
 To him who Reigns, and so much to him due
 Of hazard more, as he above the rest 455
 High honour'd sits? Go therefore mighty Powers,
 Terror of Heav'n, though fall'n; intend at home,
 While here shall be our home, what best may ease
 The present misery, and render Hell
 More tollerable; if there be cure or charm 460
 To respite or deceive, or slack the pain
 Of this ill Mansion: intermit no watch
 Against the wakeful Foe, while I abroad
 Through all the Coasts of dark destruction seek
 Deliverance for us all: this enterprize 465
 None shall partake with me. Thus saying rose
 The Monarch, and prevented all reply,
 Prudent, lest from his resolution rais'd
 Others among the chief might offer now
 (Certain to be refus'd) what erst they fear'd; 470
 And so refus'd might in opinion stand
 His Rivals, winning cheap the high repute
 Which he through hazard huge must earn. But they
 Dreaded not more th'adventure than his voice
 Forbidding; and at once with him they rose; 475
 Their rising all at once was as the sound
 Of Thunder heard remote. Towards him they bend
 With awful reverence prone; and as a God
 Exoll him equal to the highest in Heav'n:

Nor fail'd they to exprefs how much they prais'd,
 That for the general fafety he defpis'd
 His own: for neither do the Spirits damn'd
 Lofe all their virtue; left bad men fhould boast
 Their fpecious deeds on Earth, which glory excite
 Or clofe ambition varnifht o're with zeal.

Thus they their doubtful consultations dark
 Ended rejoycing in their matchlefs Chief:
 As when from mountain tops the dusky clouds
 Afcending, while the North-wind fleeps, o'er-fpread
 Heav'n's chearful face, the lowring Element
 Scowls o're the dark'nd lantskip Snow, or fhower;
 If chance the radiant Sun with farewell fweet
 Extend his ev'ning beam, the fields revive,
 The birds their notes renew, and bleating herds
 Atteft their joy, that hill and valley rings.

O fhame to men! Devil with Devil damn'd
 Firm concord holds, men only difagree
 Of Creatures rational, though under hope
 Of heavenly Grace: and God proclaiming peace,
 Yet live in hatred, enmity, and ftrife
 Among themfelves, and levie cruel wars,
 Wafing the Earth, each other to deftroy:
 As if (which might induce us to accord)
 Man had not hellifh foes anow befides,

That day and night for his deftruction wait.

The Stygian Counsel thus diffolv'd; and forth
 In order came the grand infernal Peers,
 'Midft came their mighty Paramount, and feem'd
 Alone th' Antagonift of Heav'n, nor lefs

Than Hell's dread Emperour with pomp supream, 510
And God-like imitated State; him round
A Globe of fiery Seraphim inclos'd
With bright imblazonry, and horrent Arms.
Then of their Session ended they bid cry
With Trumpets regal sound the great result: 515
Towards the four winds four speedy Cherubim
Put to their mouths the sounding Alchymie
By Heralds Voice explain'd; the hollow Abyss
Heard far and wide, and all the Host of Hell
With deafning shout, return'd them loud acclaim. 520
Thence more at ease their minds, and somewhat rais'd
By false presumptuous hope, the ranged powers
Disband, and wandring, each his several way
Pursues, as inclination or sad choice
Leads him perplext, where he may likeliest find 525
Truce to his restless thoughts, and entertain
The irksome hours, till this great Chief return.
Part on the Plain, or in the Air sublime
Upon the wing, or in swift Race contend,
As at th' Olympian Games or *Pythian* fields; 530
Part curb their fiery Steeds, or shun the Goal
With rapid wheels, or fronted Brigads form.
As when to warn proud Cities war appears
Wag'd in the troubl'd Sky, and Armies rush
To Battel in the Clouds, before each Van 535
Prick forth the Aery Knights, and couch their Spears
Till thickest Legions close; with feats of Arms
From either end of Heav'n the welkin burns.
Others with vast *Typhoean* rage more fell

Rend up both Rocks and Hills, and ride the Air 540
 In whirlwind ; Hell scarce holds the wild uproar.
 As when *Alcides* from *Oechalia* crown'd
 With conquest, felt th' envenom'd robe, and tore
 Through pain up by the roots *Theſſalian* Pines,
 And *Lichas* from the top of *Oeta* threw 545
 Into th' *Euboic* Sea. Others more mild,
 Retreated in a ſilent valley, ſing
 With notes Angelical to many a Harp
 Their own Heroic deeds and hapleſs fall
 By doom of Battel ; and complain that Fate 550
 Free Virtue ſhould enthrall to Force or Chance.
 Their Song was partial, but the harmony
 (What could it leſs when Spirits immortal ſing ?)
 Suspended Hell, and took with raviſhment
 The thronging audience. In diſcourſe more ſweet 555
 (For Eloquence the Soul, Song charms the Senſe,)
 Others apart ſat on a Hill retir'd,
 In thoughts more elevate, and reaſon'd high
 Of Providence, Foreknowledge, Will and Fate,
 Fixt Fate, free Will, Foreknowledge abſolute, 560
 And found no end, in wandering mazes loſt.
 Of good and evil much they argued then,
 Of happineſs and final miſery.
 Paſſion and Apathie, and glory and ſhame,
 Vain wiſdom all, and falſe Philoſophy : 565
 Yet with a pleaſing forcery could charm
 Pain for a while or anguiſh, and excite
 Fallacious hope, or arm th' obdurate breaſt
 With ſtubborn patience as with triple ſteel.

Another Part in Squadrons and gross Bands, 570
 On bold adventure to discover wide
 That dismal world, if any Clime perhaps
 Might yield them easier habitation, bend
 Four ways their flying March, along the Banks
 Of four infernal Rivers that disgorge 575
 Into the burning Lake their baleful streams;
 Abhorred *Styx* the flood of deadly hate,
 Sad *Acheron* of sorrow, black and deep;
Cocytus, nam'd of lamentation loud
 Heard on the rueful stream; fierce *Phlegeton* 580
 Whose waves of torrent fire inflame with rage.
 Far off from these a slow and silent stream,
Lethe the river of Oblivion rolls
 Her watry Labyrinth, whereof who drinks,
 Forthwith his former state and being forgets, 585
 Forgets both joy and grief, pleasure and pain.
 Beyond this flood a frozen Continent
 Lies dark and wild, beat with perpetual storms
 Of Whirlwind and dire Hail, which on firm land
 Thaws not, but gathers heap, and ruin seems 590
 Of ancient pile; all else deep snow and ice,
 A gulf profound as that *Serbonian* Bog
 Betwixt *Damiata* and mount *Casius* old,
 Where Armies whole have sunk: the parching Air
 Burns froze, and cold performs th' effect of Fire. 595
 Thither by harpy-footed furies hail'd,
 At certain revolutions all the damn'd
 Are brought: and feel by turns the bitter change
 Of fierce extremes, extremes by change more fierce,

From Beds of raging Fire to starve in Ice 600
 Their soft Ethereal warmth, and there to pine
 Immovable, infixt, and frozen round,
 Periods of time, thence hurried back to fire.
 They ferry over this *Letbean* Sound
 Both to and fro, their sorrow to augment, 605
 And wish and struggle, as they pass, to reach
 The tempting stream, with one small drop to lose
 In sweet forgetfulness all pain and woe,
 All in one moment, and so near the brink;
 But fate withstands, and to oppose th' attempt 610
Medusa with *Gorgonian* terrour guards
 The Ford, and of it self the water flies
 All tast of living wight, as once it fled
 The lip of *Tantalus*. Thus roving on
 In-confus'd march forlorn th'adventrous Bands 615
 With shuddring horror pale, and eyes agast
 View'd first their lamentable lot, and found
 No rest: through many a dark and dreary Vale
 They pass'd, and many a region dolorous,
 O'er many a Frozen, many a fiery Alp, 620
 Rocks, Caves, Lakes, Fens, Bogs, Dens, and shades of
 A Universe of death, which God by curse [death,
 Created evil, for evil only good,
 Where all life dies, death lives, and Nature breeds,
 Perverse, all monstrous, all prodigious things, 625
 Abominable, inutterable, and worse
 Than Fables yet have feign'd, or fear conceiv'd,
Gorgons and *Hydra's*, and *Chimera's* dire.

Mean while the Adversary of God and Man,

Van with thoughts inflam'd of highest design, 630
 As on swift wings, and towards the Gates of Hell
 Explores his solitary flight; sometimes
 Scours the right hand coast, sometimes the left,
 Now haves with level wing the Deep, then soars
 To the fiery Concave towering high. 635
 When far off at Sea a Fleet descri'd
 Lays in the Clouds, by *Equinoctial* Winds
 Borne sailing from *Bengala*, or the Isles
 Of *Ternate* and *Tidore*, whence Merchants bring
 Their spicy Drugs: they on the Trading Flood 640
 Prowl through the wide *Ethiopian* to the Cape.
 Stemming nightly toward the Pole. So seem'd
 As off the flying Fiend: at last appear
 All bounds high reaching to the borrid Roof,
 And thrice threefold the Gates; three folds were Brass,
 Three Iron, three of Adamantine Rock, 645
 Impenetrable, impal'd with circling fire,
 Yet unconsum'd. Before the Gates there sat
 On either side a formidable shape;
 The one seem'd Woman to the waste, and fair, 650
 But ended foul in many a scaly fould
 Voluminous and vast, a Serpent arm'd
 With Mortal sting: about her middle round
 A cry of Hell Hounds never ceasing bark'd
 With wide *Cerberian* mouths full loud, and rung 655
 A hideous Peal: yet, when they list, would creep,
 Fought disturb'd their noise, into her womb,
 And kennel there, yet there still bark'd and howl'd,
 Within unseen. Far less abhorr'd than these

Vex'd *Scylla*, bathing in the Sea that parts 66
Calabria from the hoarse *Trinacrian* shore:
 Nor uglier follow the Night-Hag, when call'd
 In secret; riding through the Air she comes
 Lur'd with the smell of infant blood, to dance
 With *Lapland* Witches, while the lab'ring Moon 67
 Eclipses at their charms. The other shape,
 If shape it might be call'd that shape had none
 Distinguishable in member, joynt, or limb,
 Or substance might be call'd that shadow seem'd,
 For each seem'd either; black it stood as Night, 67
 Fierce as ten Furies, terrible as Hell,
 And shook a dreadful Dart; what seem'd his head
 The likeness of a Kingly Crown had on.
Satan was now at hand, and from his seat
 The Monster moving onward came as fast 68
 With horrid strides, Hell trembled as he strode.
 Th' undaunted Fiend what this might be admird,
 Admir'd, not fear'd; God and his Son except,
 Created thing naught valu'd he nor shun'd;
 And with disdainful look thus first began. 69

Whence and what art thou, execrable shape,
 That dar'st, though grim and terrible, advance
 Thy miscreated Front athwart my way
 To yonder Gates? through them I mean to pass,
 That be assur'd, without leave askt of thee. 70
 Retire, or tast thy folly, and learn by proof,
 Hell-born, not to contend with Spirits of Heav'n.
 To whom the Goblin full of wrath reply'd,
 Art thou that Traitor Angel, art thou he,

Who first broke peace in Heav'n and Faith, till then
 Unbrok'n, and in proud rebellious Arms 691
 Drew after him the third part of Heav'n's Sons
 Conjur'd against the highest, for which both thou
 And they outcast from God, are here condemn'd
 To waste Eternal days in woe and pain? 695
 And reck'n'st thou thy self with Spirits of Heav'n,
 Hell-doom'd, and breath'st defiance here and scorn
 Where I reign King, and to enrage thee more,
 Thy King and Lord? Back to thy punishment,
 False fugitive, and to thy speed add wings, 700
 Left with a whip of Scorpions I pursue
 Thy lingring, or with one stroke of this Dart
 Strange horror seize thee, and pangs unfelt before.

So spake the griesly terrour, and in shape,
 So speaking and so threatening, grew tenfold 705
 More dreadful and deform: on th'other side
 Incens'd with indignation *Satan* stood
 Unterrifi'd, and like a Comet burn'd,
 That fires the length of *Ophiucus* huge
 In th'Arctick Sky, and from his horrid hair 710
 Shakes Pestilence and War. Each at the Head
 Levell'd his deadly aim; their fatal hands
 No second stroke intend, and such a frown
 Each cast at th'other, as when two black Clouds
 With Heav'n's Artill'ry fraught, comerating on 715
 Over the *Caspian*, then stand front to front
 Hov'ring a space, till Winds the Signal blow
 To joyn their dark Encounter in mid air:
 So frown'd the mighty Combatants, that Hell

Grew darker at their frown, so match'd they stood;
 For never but once more was either like 721
 To meet so great a foe: and now great deeds
 Had been achiev'd, whereof all Hell had rung,
 Had not the Snaky Sorcerers that sat
 Fast by Hell Gate, and kept the fatal Key, 725
 Ris'n, and with hideous outcry rush'd between.

O Father, what intends thy Hand, the cry'd,
 Against thy only Son? What Fury O Son,
 Possesses thee to bend that mortal Dart 729
 Against thy Father's Head? and know'st for whom;
 For him who sits above and laughs the while
 At thee ordain'd his drudge, to execute
 What e'er his wrath, which he calls Justice, bids,
 His Wrath which one day will destroy ye both.

She spake, and at her words the hellish Pest 735
 Forbore, then these to her *Satan* return'd:

So strange thy outcry, and thy Words so strange
 Thou interposest, that my sudden hand
 Prevented spares to tell thee yet by deeds
 What it intends; till first I know of thee,
 What thing thou art, thus double-form'd, and why
 In this infernal vale first met thou call'st
 Me Father, and that Fantasm call'st my Son;
 I know thee not, nor ever saw till now
 Sight more detestable than him and thee. 745

T'whom thus the Portress of Hell Gate reply'd;
 Hast thou forgot me then, and do I seem
 Now in thine eye so foul, once deem'd so fair
 In Heav'n, when at th' Assembly, and in sight

Of all the Seraphim with thee combin'd 750
 In bold conspiracy against Heav'n's King,
 All on a sudden miserable pain
 Surpris'd thee, dim thine eyes, and dizzy swum
 In darkness, while thy head flames thick and fast
 Threw forth, till on the left side op'ning wide, 755
 Likest to thee in shape and count'nance bright,
 Then shining heav'nly fair, a Goddess arm'd
 Out of thy head I sprung: amazement seiz'd
 All th' Host of Heav'n; back they recoil'd affraid
 At first, and call'd me *Sin*, and for a Sign 760
 Potentous held me; but familiar grown,
 I pleas'd, and with attractive Graces won
 The most adverse, thee chiefly, who full oft
 Thy self in me thy perfect image viewing
 Becam'st inamour'd, and such joy thou took'st 765
 With me in secret, that my womb conceiv'd
 A growing Burthen. Mean while war arose,
 And fields were fought in Heav'n; wherein remain'd
 (For what could else) to our Almighty Foe
 Clear Victory, to our part loss and rout 770
 Through all the Empyrean: down they fell
 Driv'n headlong from the pitch of Heaven, down
 Into this Deep, and in the gen'ral fall
 I also; at which time this powerful Key
 Into my hand was giv'n, with charge to keep 775
 These Gates for ever shut, which none can pass
 Without my op'ning. Pensive here I sat
 Alone, but long I sat not, till my womb
 Pregnant by thee, and now excessive grown

Prodigious motion felt and rueful throes. 786

At last this odious offspring whom thou seest
Thine own begotten, breaking violent way
Tore through my intrain, that with fear and pain
Distorted, all my mether shape thus grow
Transform'd: but he my inbred enemy 795

Forth issu'd, brandishing his fatal Dart
Made to destroy: I fled, and cry'd out *Death*;
Hell trembl'd at the hideous Name, and sigh'd
From all her Caves, and back-rebound'd *Death*.

I fled, but he pursu'd (though more, it seems, 798
Inflam'd with lust than rage) and swifter far,
Me overtook his Mother all dismay'd,
And in embraces forcible and foul

Ingendring with me, of that rape begot
These yelling Monsters that with ceaseless cry 799
Surround me, as thou saw'st, hourly conceiv'd
And hourly born, with sorrow infinite

To me, for when they list into the Womb
That bred them they return, and howl and gnaw
My Bowels, their repast; then bursting forth 802
Afresh with conscious terrors vex me round,
That rest or intermission none I find.

Before mine eyes in opposition sits
Grim *Death* my Son and foe, who sets them on,
And me his Parent would full soon devour 805

For want of other prey, but that he knows
His end with mine involv'd; and knows that I
Should prove a bitter Morfel, and his bane,
Whenever that shall be; so Fate pronounc'd.

But thou O Father, I forewarn thee, thou 810
 His deadly arrow ; neither vainly hope
 To be invuln'able in those bright Arms,
 Though temper'd heav'nly, for that mortal dint,
 Save he who reigns above, none can resist.

She finish'd, and the subtle Fiend his lore 815
 Soon learn'd, now milder, and thus answer'd smooth.

Dear Daughter, since thou claim'st me for thy Sire,
 And my fair Son here shewst me, the dear pledge
 Of dalliance had with thee in Heav'n, and joys
 Then sweet, now sad to mention, thus' dire change
 Befall'n us unforeseen, unthought of, know 821
 I come no enemy, but to set free

From out this dark and dismal house of pain,
 Both him and thee, and all the heav'nly Host
 Of Spirits that in our just pretences arm'd 825

Fell with us from on high : from them I go
 This uncouth Errand sole, and one for all
 My self expose, with lonely steps to tread
 Th' unfounded deep, and through the void immense
 To search with wandering quest a place foretold 830
 Should be, and, by concurring signs, e'er now
 Created vast and round, a place of bliss

In the pourlieues of Heav'n, and therein plac'd
 A race of upstart Creatures, to supply
 Perhaps our vacant room, though more remov'd, 835
 Left Heav'n furcharg'd with potent multitude
 Might hap to move new broils : Be this or aught
 Than this more secret now design'd, I haste
 To know, and this once known, shall soon return,

And bring ye to the place where Thou and Death
 Shall dwell at ease, and up and down unseen
 Wing silently the buxom Air, imbalm'd
 With odours ; there ye shall be fed and fill'd
 Immeasurably, all things shall be your prey.
 He ceas'd, for both seem'd highly pleas'd, and Death
 Grinn'd horrible a ghastly smile, to hear
 His famine should be fill'd, and blest his maw
 Destin'd to that good hour : no less enjoy'd
 His Mother bad, and thus bespake her Sire :

The Key of this infernal Pit by due,
 And by command of Heav'n's all-powerful King
 I keep, by him forbidden to unlock
 These Adamantine Gates ; against all force
 Death ready stands to interpose his dart,
 Fearless to be o'ermatch'd by living might.
 But what owe I to his commands above
 Who hates me, and hath hither thrust me down
 Into the gloom of *Tartarus* profound,
 To sit in hateful Office here confin'd,
 Inhabitant of Heav'n, and heav'nly-born,
 Here in perpetual agony and pain,
 With terrors and with clamors compass'd round
 Of mine own brood, that on my bowels feed :
 Thou art my Father, thou my Author, thou
 My Being gav'st me ; whom should I obey
 But thee, whom follow ? thou wilt bring me soon
 To that new world of light and bliss, among
 The Gods who live at ease, where I shall reign
 At thy right hand voluptuous, as befits

thy daughter and thy darling, without end. 870
 Thus saying, from her side the fatal Key,
 Sad instrument of all our woe, she took;
 And towards the Gate rolling her bestial train,
 Forthwith the huge Porcullis high up drew,
 Which but her self, not all the *Stygian* powers 875
 Could once have mov'd; then in the key-hole turns
 Th' intricate Wards, and every Bolt and Bar
 Of massie Iron or sallow Rock with ease
 Unfastens: On a sudden open fly
 With impetuous recoil and jarring sound 880
 Th' infernal doors, and on their hinges grate
 Harsh Thunder, that the lowest bottom shook
 Of *Erebus*. She open'd, but to shut
 Excell'd her power; the Gates wide open stood,
 That with extended wings a banner'd Host 885
 Under spread Ensigns marching might pass through
 With Horse and Chariots rank'd in loose array;
 So wide they stood, and like a Furnace mouth
 Cast forth redounding smoak and ruddy flame.
 Before their Eyes in sudden view appear 890
 The secrets of the hoary deep, and dark
 Illimitable Ocean without bound, [height,
 Without dimension, where length, breadth, and
 And time and place are lost; where eldest Night
 And *Chaos*, ancestors of Nature, hold 895
 Eternal *Anarchy*, amidst the noise
 Of endless Wars, and by confusion stand.
 For hot, cold, moist, and dry, four Champions fierce
 Strive here for Mast'ry, and to Battel bring

Their embryon Atoms; they around the Flag 908
 Of each his Faction, in their sev'ral Clans,
 Light-arm'd or heavy, sharp, smooth, swift or slow,
 Swarm populous, un-numbered as the Sands
 Of *Bactra* or *Cyrene's* torrid soil,
 Levi'd to side with warring Winds, and poise 905
 Their lighter wings. To whom these most adhere,
 He rules a moment; *Chaos* Umpire sits,
 And by decision more embroils the fray
 By which he reigns: next him high Arbitrer
Chance governs all. Into this wild Abyss, 910
 The Womb of Nature, and perhaps her Grave,
 Of neither Sea, nor Shoar, nor Air, nor Fire,
 But all these in their pregnant causes mixt
 Confus'dly, and which thus must ever fight,
 Unless th'Almighty Maker them ordain 915
 His dark materials to create more Worlds,
 Into this wild Abyss the wary Fiend
 Stood on the brink of Hell and look'd a while,
 Pond'ring his Voyage; for no narrow frith
 He had to cross. Nor was his ear less peal'd 920
 With noises loud and ruinous (to compare
 Great things with small) than when *Bellona* storms
 With all her battering Engines bent to rase
 Some Capital City; or less than if this frame
 Of Heav'n were falling, and these Elements 925
 In mutiny had from her Axle torn
 The stedfast Earth. At last his Sail-broad Vannes
 He spreads for flight, and in the surging smoke
 Uplifted spurns the ground, thence many a League

As in a cloudy Chair, ascending rides 930
 Audacious, but that seat soon failing, meets
 A vast vacancy: all unawares
 Flutt'ring his peacocks vain plumb down he drops
 Ten thousand fathom deep, and to this hour
 Down had been falling, had not by ill chance 935
 The strong rebuff of some tumultuous cloud
 Instinct with Fire and Nitre hurried him
 As many miles aloft: that fury stay'd,
 Quencht in a Boggy Syrtis, neither Sea,
 Nor good dry Land: nigh founder'd on he fares, 940
 Treading the crude consistence, half on foot,
 Half flying; behooves him now both Oar and Sail.
 As when a Geyser through the Wildernesse
 With winged course o'er Hill or moory Dale,
 Pursues the *Arimaspians*, who by stealth 945
 Had from his wakeful custody purloin'd
 The guarded Gold: so eagerly the Fiend
 O'er bog or steep, through strait, rough, dense, or rare,
 With head, hands, wings or feet pursues his way,
 And swims or sinks, or wades, or creeps, or flies: 950
 At length a universal hubbub wild
 Of stunning sounds and voices all confus'd
 Born through the hollow dark assaults his ear
 With loudest vehemence: thither he plies,
 Undaunted to meet there whatever power 955
 Or Spirit of the nethermost Abyss
 Might in that noise reside, of whom to ask
 Which way the nearest coast of darkness lies
 Bordering on light; when straight behold the Throne

Of *Chaos*, and his dark Pavilion spread 960
 Wide on the wasteful Deep ; with him enthron'd
 Sate Sable-vested *Night*, eldest of things,
 The Consort of his Reign ; and by them stood
Orkus and *Ades*, and the dreaded name
 Of *Demogorgon* ; *Rumor* next and *Chance*, 965
 And *Tumult* and *Confusion* all imbroil'd,
 And *Discord* with a thousand various mouths.

T'whom *Satan* turning boldly, thus. Ye Powers,
 And Spirits of this nethermost Abyss,
Chaos and ancient *Night*, I come no Spy, 970
 With purpose to explore or to disturb
 The secrets of your Realm, but by constraint
 Wandring this darksome Desert, as my way,
 Lies through your spacious Empire up to light,
 Alone, and without guide, half lost, I seek 975
 What readiest path leads where your gloomie bounds
 Confine with Heav'n ; or if some other place
 From your Dominion won, th' *Ethereal King*
 Possesses lately, thither to arrive
 I travel this profound, direct my course ; 980
 Directed no mean recompence it brings
 To your behoof, if I that Region lost,
 All usurpation thence expell'd, reduce
 To her original darkness and your sway
 (Which is my present journey) and once more 985
 Erect the Standard there of ancient *Night* ;
 Yours be th' advantage all, mine the revenge.

Thus *Satan* ; and him thus the Anarch old
 With fault'ring speech and visage incompas'd

answer'd. I know thee, stranger, who thou art, 990
 That mighty leading Angel, who of late
 Made head against Heav'n's King, though overthrow'n.
 Saw and heard, for such a numerous Host
 Held not in silence through the frighted deep
 With ruin upon ruin, rout on rout, 995
 Confusion worse confounded; and Heav'n Gates
 Pour'd out by millions her victorious Bands
 Pursuing. I upon my Frontiers here
 Keep residence; if all I can will serve,
 That little which is left so to defend, 1000
 Encroacht on still through our intestine broiles,
 Weakening the Sceptre of old Night: first Hell
 Your dungeon stretching far and wide beneath;
 Now lately Heav'n and Earth, another World
 Hung o'er my Realm, link'd in a golden Chain 1005
 To that side Heav'n from whence your Legions fell:
 If that way be your walk, you have not far;
 So much the nearer danger; go and speed;
 Havock and spoil and ruin are my gain.

He ceas'd; and *Satan* staid not to reply, 1010
 But glad that now his Sea should find a shore,
 With fresh alacrity and force renew'd
 Springs upward like a Pyramid of fire
 Into the wild expanse, and through the shock
 Of fighting Elements, on all sides round 1015
 Environ'd wins his way; harder beset
 And more endanger'd, than when *Argo* pass'd
 Through *Bosporus* betwixt the jutting Rocks:
 Or when *Ulysses* on the Larbord shunn'd

Charybdis, and by th' other whirlpool steer'd. 1020
 So he with difficulty and labour hard
 Mov'd on, with difficulty and labour he;
 But he once past, soon after when man fell,
 Strange alteration! Sin and Death attain
 Following his track, such was the will of Heav'n, 1025
 Pav'd after him a broad and beat'n way
 Over the dark Abyss, whose boiling Gulf
 Tamely endur'd a Bridge of wond'rous length
 From Hell continu'd reaching th' utmost Orbe
 Of this frail World; by which the Spirits perverse
 With easie intercourse pass to and fro 1035
 To tempt or punish mortals, except whom
 God and good Angels guard by special grace.
 But now at last the sacred influence
 Of light appears, and from the walls of Heav'n
 Shoots far into the bosom of dim Night 1036
 A glimmering dawn; here Nature first begins
 Her farthest verge, and *Chaos* to retire
 As from her utmost works a brok'n foe
 With tumult less and with less hostile din, 1040
 That *Satan* with less toil, and now with ease
 Wafts on the calmer wave with dubious light
 And like a weather-beaten Vessel holds
 Gladly the Port, though Shrouds and Tackle torn;
 Or in the emptier waste, resembling Air, 1045
 Weighs his spread wings, at leisure to behold
 Far off th' Empyrean Heav'n, extended wide
 In circuit, undetermin'd square or round.
 With Opal Towers and Battlements adorn'd

Of living Saphire, once his native Seat ; 1050
 And fast by hanging in a golden Chain
 This pendant world, in bigness as a Star
 Of smallest Magnitude close by the Moon.
 Thither full fraught with mischievous revenge,
 Accurst, and in a cursed hour he hies. 1055

The End of the Second Book.

Paradise Lost.

BOOK III.

The ARGUMENT.

God sitting on his Throne sees Satan flying towards this World, then newly created ; shews him to the Son who sat at his right hand ; foretells the success of Satan in perverting Mankind ; clears his own Justice and Wisdom from all imputation, having created Man free, and able enough to have withstood his Tempter ; yet declares his purpose of Grace towards him, in regard he fell not of his own malice, as did Satan, but by him seduc'd. The Son of God renders praises to his Father for the manifestation of his gracious purpose towards Man ; but God again declares, that Grace cannot be extended towards Man without the satisfaction of divine Justice ; Man hath





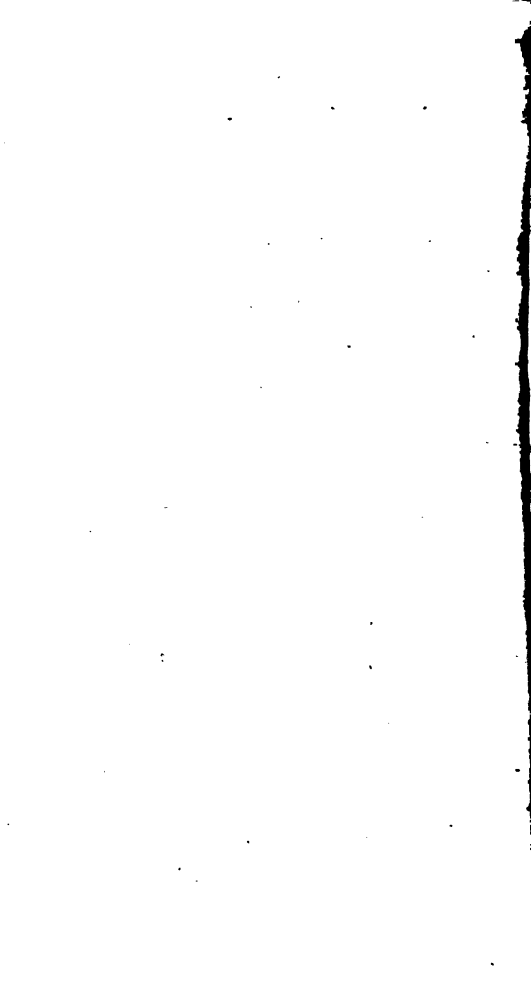
Paradise Lost.

BOOK III.

The ARGUMENT.

*God sitting on his Throne sees Satan fly
towards this World, then newly cre-
ated ; shews him to the Son who sat
at his right hand ; foretells the success of
Satan in perverting Mankind ; clears his
own Justice and Wisdom from all im-
putation, having created Man free, and
able enough to have withstood his Tem-
pter ; yet declares his purpose of Grace
towards him, in regard he fell not of his
own malice, as did Satan, but by him
seduc'd. The Son of God renders praises
to his Father for the manifestation of his
gracious purpose towards Man ; but God
again declares, that Grace cannot be ex-
tended towards Man without the satis-
faction of divine Justice ; Man hath*





offended the majesty of God by aspiring to God-head, and therefore with all his Progeny devoted to death must die, unless some one can be found sufficient to answer for his offence, and undergo his Punishment. The Son of God freely offers himself a Ransome for Man: the Father accepts him, ordains his Incarnation, pronounces his exaltation above all Names in Heaven and Earth; commands all the Angels to adore him; they obey, and hymning to their Harps in full Quire, celebrate the Father and the Son. Mean while Satan alights upon the bare Convex of this World's outermost Orb; where wandring he first finds a place, since call'd The Lymbo of Vanity; what persons and things fly up thither; thence comes to the Gate of Heaven, describ'd ascending by stairs, and the waters above the Firmament that flow about it: His passage thence to the Orb of the Sun; he finds there Uriel the Regent of that Orb, but first changes himself into the shape of a meaner Angel; and pretending a zealous desire to behold the new Creation, and Man whom God hath plac'd here, enquires of him the place of his habitation, and is directed; alights first on Mount Niphates:

About him all the Sanctities of Heav'n
 Stood thick as Stars, and from his sight receiv'd
 Beatitude past utterance : on his right
 The radiant image of his Glory sat,
 His only Son; On Earth he first beheld
 Our two first Parents, yet the only two
 Of mankind, in the happy Garden plac'd,
 Reaping immortal fruits of joy and love,
 Uninterrupted joy, unrival'd love
 In blissful solitude; he then survey'd
 Hell and the Gulf between, and *Satan* there
 Coasting the wall of Heav'n on this side Night
 In the dun Air sublime, and ready now
 To stoop with wearied wings, and willing feet
 On the bare outside of this World, that seem'd
 Firm Land imbosom'd without Firmament,
 Uncertain which, in Ocean or in Air.
 Him God beholding from his prospect high,
 Wherein past, present, future he beholds,
 Thus to his only Son foreseeing spake.

Only begotten Son, see'st thou what rage
 Transports our Adversary, whom no bounds
 Prescrib'd, no bars of Hell, nor all the chains
 Heap'd on him there, nor yet the main Abyss
 Wide interrupt can hold; so bent he seems
 On desperate revenge, that shall redound
 Upon his own rebellious head. And now
 Through all restraint broke loose he wings his way
 Not far off Heav'n, in the Precincts of light,
 Directly towards the new created World,

And

And Man there plac'd, with purpose to assay 90
 If him by force he can destroy, or worse,
 By some false guile pervert; and shall pervert,
 For Man will heark'n to his glozing lyes,
 And easily transgress the sole Command,
 Sole pledge of his obedience: So will fall, 95
 He and his faithless Progeny: Whose fault?
 Whose but his own? Ingrate, he had of me
 All he could have; I made him just and right,
 Sufficient to have stood, though free to fall.
 Such I created all th' Ethereal Powers 100
 And Spirits, both them who stood and them who
 Freely they stood who stood, and fell who fell. [fail'd;
 Not free, what proof could they have gain'd sincere
 Of true allegiance, constant Faith or Love,
 Where only what they needs must do, appear'd, 105
 Not what they would? what praise could they receive?
 What pleasure I from such obedience paid,
 When Will and Reason (Reason also is choice)
 Useless and vain, of freedom both despoil'd,
 Made passive both, had serv'd necessity, 110
 Not me. They therefore as to right belong'd,
 So were created, nor can justly accuse
 Their maker, or their making, or their Fate,
 As if Predestination over-rul'd
 Their will, dispos'd by absolute Decree 115
 Or high foreknowledge; they themselves decreed
 Their own revolt, not I; if I foreknew,
 Foreknowledge had no influence on their fault,
 Which had no less prov'd certain unforeknown.

So without least impulse or shadow of Fate, 125
 Or aught by me immutably foreseen,
 They trespass, Authors to themselves in all
 Both what they judge and what they choose; forso
 I form'd them free, and free they must remain,
 'Till they enthrall themselves; I else must change
 Their nature, and revoke the high Decree 127
 Unchangeable, Eternal, which ordain'd
 Their freedom, they themselves ordain'd their fall.
 The first sort by their own suggestion fell,
 Self-tempted, Self-deprav'd: Man falls deceiv'd 130
 By the other first: Man therefore shall find grace,
 The other none: in Mercy and Justice both,
 Through Heav'n and Earth, so shall my glory excel
 But Mercy first and last shall brightest shine.

Thus while God spake, ambrosial fragrance fill'd
 All Heav'n, and in the blessed Spirits elect 135
 Sense of new joy ineffable diffus'd:
 Beyond compare the Son of God was seen
 Most glorious, in him all his Father shon
 Substantially express'd, and in his face 140
 Divine compassion visibly appear'd,
 Love without end, and without measure Grace,
 Which uttering thus he to his Father spake.

O Father, gracious was that word which clos'd 145
 Thy sov'reign sentence, that Man should find grace
 For which both Heav'n and Earth shall high extoll
 Thy praises, with th' innumerable sound
 Of Hymns and sacred Songs, wherewith thy Throat
 Encompass'd shall resound thee ever blest.

Should Man finally be lost, should Man 150
 any creature late so lov'd, thy youngest Son
 all circumvented thus by fraud, though joyn'd
 with his own folly? that be from thee far,
 that far be from thee, Father, who art Judge
 of all things made, and judgest only right. 155
 Or shall the Adversary thus obtain
 his end, and frustrate thine, shall he fulfill
 his malice, and thy goodness bring to naught,
 Or proud return though to his heavier doom,
 yet with revenge accomplish'd, and to Hell 160
 draw after him the whole Race of mankind,
 y him corrupted? or wilt thou thy self
 abolish thy Creation, and unmake,
 or him, what for thy glory thou hast made?
 Should thy goodness and thy greatness both 165
 be question'd and blasphem'd without defence.
 To whom the great Creatour thus reply'd.
 Son, in whom my soul hath chief delight,
 son of my bosom, Son who art alone
 my word, my wisdom, and effectual might, 170
 all hast thou spoken as my thoughts are, all
 as my Eternal purpose hath decreed:
 Man shall not quite be lost, but sav'd who will,
 not of will in him, but grace in me
 I vouchsaf'd; once more I will renew 175
 his laps'd powers, though forfeit and enthrall'd
 y sin to foul exorbitant desires;
 Upheld by me, yet once more he shall stand
 on even ground against his mortal foe,

By me upheld, that he may know how frail . 180
His fall'n condition is, and to me owe
All his deliv'rance, and to none but me.
Some I have chosen of peculiar grace
Elect above the rest: so is my will:
The rest shall hear me call, and oft be warn'd : 185
Their sinful state, and to appease betimes
Th' incens'd Deity, while offer'd grace
Invites: for I will clear their senses dark,
What may suffice, and soft'n stony hearts
To pray, repent, and bring obedience due. . 190
To Prayer, repentance, and obedience due,
Though but endeavour'd with sincere intent,
Mine ear shall not be slow, mine eye not shut.
And I will place within them as a guide
My Umpire *Conscience*, whom if they will hear, 195
Light after light well us'd they shall attain,
And to the end persisting, safe arrive.
This my long sufferance and my day of grace
They who neglect and scorn, shall never taste;
But hard be harden'd, blind be blinded more, 200
That they may stumble on, and deeper fall;
And none but such from mercy I exclude.
But yet all is not done; Man disobeying,
Disloyal breaks his fealty, and sins
Against the high Supremacy of Heav'n, . 205
Affecting God-head, and so losing all,
To expiate his Treason hath naught left,
But to destruction sacred and devote,
He with his whole posterity must die,

Die he or Justice must; unless for him 210
 Some other able, and as willing, pay
 The rigid satisfaction, death for death.
 Say Heav'nly powers, where shall we find such love;
 Which of ye will be mortal to redeem
 Man's mortal crime, and just th' unjust to save, 215
 Dwells in all Heav'n charity so dear?

He ask'd, but all the Heav'nly Quire stood mute,
 And silence was in Heav'n: on mans behalf
 Patron or Intercessor none appear'd,
 Much less that durst upon his own head draw 220
 The deadly forfeiture, and ransom set.
 And now without redemption all mankind
 Must have been lost, adjudg'd to Death and Hell
 By doom severe, had not the Son of God,
 In whom the fulness dwells of love divine, 225
 His dearest Mediation thus renew'd.

Farther, thy word is past, man shall find grace;
 And shall grace not find means, that finds her way,
 The speediest of the winged messengers,
 To visit all thy creatures, and to all 230
 Comes unprevented, unimplo'd, unsought,
 Happy for man; so coming; he her aid
 Can never seek, once dead in sins and lost;
 Attonement for himself or offering meet,
 Indebted and undon, hath none to bring: 235
 Behold me then, me for him, life for life
 I offer, on me let thine anger fall;
 Account me man; I for his sake will leave
 Thy bosom, and this glory next to thee

Freely put off, and for him lastly die 240
 Well pleas'd, on me let Death wreck all his rage;
 Under his gloomy power I shall not long
 Lie vanquish'd: thou hast giv'n me to possess
 Life in my self for ever, by thee I live,
 Though now to Death I yield, and am his due 245
 All that of me can die; yet that debt paid,
 Thou wilt not leave me in the loathsome grave
 His prey, nor suffer my unspotted Soul
 For ever with corruption there to dwell;
 But I shall rise Victorious, and subdue 250
 My vanquisher, spoil'd of his vaunted spoils;
 Death his death's wound shall then receive, and stoop
 Inglorious, of his mortal sting disarm'd.
 I through the ample Air in Triumph high
 Shall lead Hell captive maugre Hell, and show 255
 The powers of darkness bound. Thou at the sight
 Pleas'd, out of Heav'n shalt look down and smile,
 While by thee rais'd I ruin all my Foes,
 Death last, and with his Carcass glut the Grave:
 Then with the multitude of my redeem'd 260
 Shall enter Heav'n long absent, and return,
 Father, to see thy face, wherein no cloud
 Of anger shall remain, but peace assur'd
 And reconciliation; wrath shall be no more
 Thenceforth, but in thy presence Joy entire. 265
 His words here ended, but his meek aspect
 Silent yet spake, and breath'd immortal love
 To mortal men, above which only shon
 Filial obedience: as a sacrifice

Glad to be offer'd, he attends the will 270
 Of his great Father. Admiration seiz'd
 All Heav'n, what this might mean, or whither tend
 Wond'ring; but soon th' Almighty thus reply'd:

O thou in Heav'n and Earth the only Peace
 Found out for mankind under wrath, O thou 275
 My sole complacence! well thou know'st how dear
 To me are all my works, nor Man the least
 Though last created, that for him I spare
 Thee from my bosom and right hand, to save,
 By losing thee a while, the whole Race lost. 280
 Thou therefore whom thou only canst redeem,
 Their Nature also to thy Nature joyn;
 And be thy self Man among men on Earth,
 Made flesh, when time shall be, of Virgin seed;
 By wondrous birth: Be thou in *Adam's* room 285
 The Head of all mankind, though *Adam's* Son.
 As in him perish all men, so in thee
 As from a second root shall be restor'd,
 As many as are restor'd, without thee none.
 His crime makes guilty all his Sons, thy merit 290
 Imputed shall absolve them who renounce
 Their own both righteous and unrighteous deeds,
 And live in thee transplanted, and from thee
 Receive new life. So Man, as is most just,
 Shall satisfy for Man, be judg'd and die, 295
 And dying rise, and rising with him raise
 His Brethren, ransom'd with his own dear life.
 So Heav'nly love shall outdoo Hellish hate
 Giving to death, and dying to redeem,

So dearly to redeem what Hellish hate 300
 So easily destroy'd, and still destroys
 In those who, when they may, accept not grace.
 Nor shalt thou by descending to assume
 Man's Nature, less'n or degrade thine own.
 Because thou hast, tho' Thron'd in highest bliss 305
 Equal to God, and equally enjoying
 God-like fruition, quitted all to save
 A World from utter loss, and hast been found
 By Merit more than Birthright Son of God,
 Found worthiest to be so by being Good, 310
 Far more than Great or High; because in thee
 Love hath abounded more than Glory abounds,
 Therefore thy Humiliation shall exalt
 With thee thy Manhood also to this Throne;
 Here shalt thou sit incarnate, here shalt reign 315
 Both God and Man, Son both of God and Man,
 Anointed universal King, and Power
 I give thee, reign for ever, and assume
 Thy Merits; under thee as Head Supreme.
 Thrones, Princedoms, Powers, Dominions I reduce:
 All knees to thee shall bow, of them that bide 320
 In Heaven, or Earth, or under Earth in Hell;
 When thou attended gloriously from Heav'n
 Shalt in the Sky appear, and from thee send
 The summoning Arch-Angels to proclaim 325
 Thy dread Tribunal: forthwith from all Winds
 The living, and forthwith the cited dead
 Of all past Ages to the general Doom
 Shall hast'n, such a peal shall rouse their sleep.

When all thy Saints assembl'd, thou shalt judge 330
 Bad men and Angels, they arraign'd shall sink
 Beneath thy Sentence; Hell, her numbers full,
 Thenceforth shall be for ever shut. Mean while
 The World shall burn, and from her ashes spring
 New Heav'n and Earth, wherein the just shall dwell,
 And after all their tribulations long 336
 See golden days, fruitful of golden deeds,
 With Joy and Love triumphing, and fair Truth.
 Then thou thy regal Scepter shalt lay by,
 For regal Scepter then no more shall need 340
 God shall be All in All. But all ye Gods,
 Adore him, who to compass all this dies,
 Adore the Son, and honour him as me.

No sooner had th' Almighty ceas'd, but all
 The multitude of Angels with a shout 345
 Loud as from numbers without number, sweet
 As from blest voices, uttering joy, Heav'n rung
 With Jubilee, and loud Hosanna's fill'd
 Th' eternal Regions: lowly reverent
 Towards either Throne they bow, and to the ground
 With solemn adoration down they cast 351
 Their Crowns inwove with Amarant and Gold,
 Immortal Amarant, a Flour which once
 In Paradise, fast by the Tree of Life
 Began to bloom, but soon for man's offence 355
 To Heav'n remov'd, where first it grew, there grows,
 And flours aloft shading the Fount of Life,
 And where the River of Bliss thro' midst of Heav'n
 Bowls o'er *Elysian* Flours her Amber stream;

With these that never fade the Spirits elect 362
 Bind their resplendent locks inwreath'd with beams
 Now in loose Garlands thick thrown off, the bright
 Pavement that like a Sea of Jasper shon
 Impurpl'd with Celestial Roses smil'd. 364
 Then Crown'd again their gold'n Harps they took,
 Harps ever tun'd, that glittering by their side
 Like Quivers hung, and with Prelude sweet
 Of charming symphony they introduce
 Their sacred Song, and waken raptures high ;
 No voice exempt, no voice but well could joyn 370
 Melodious part, such concord is in Heav'n.

Thee Father first they sung Omnipotent,
 Immutable, Immortal, Infinite,
 Eternal King ; thee Author of all being,
 Fountain of Light, thy self invifible 375
 Amidst the glorious brightness where thou sit'st
 Thron'd inaccessible, but when thou shad'st
 The full blaze of thy beams, and through a cloud
 Drawn round about thee like a radiant Shrine,
 Dark with excessive bright thy skirts appear, 380
 Yet dazle Heav'n, that brightest Seraphim
 Approach not, but with both wings veil their eyes.
 Thee next they sang of all Creation first,
 Begotten Son, Divine Similitude,
 In whose conspicuous count'nance, without cloud
 Made visible, th' Almighty Father shines, 386
 Whom else no Creature can behold ; on thee
 Impress'd the effulgence of his Glory abides,
 Transfus'd on thee his ample Spirit rests.

The Heav'n of Heavens and all the Powers therein 390
 By thee created, and by thee threw down
 Th' aspiring Dominations : thou that day
 Thy Father's dreadful Thunder didst not spare,
 Nor stop thy flaming Chariot wheels, that shook
 Heav'n's everlasting Frame, while o'er the necks 395
 Thou drov'st of warring Angels disarraid.
 Back from pursuit thy Powers with loud acclaime
 Thee only extoll'd, Son of thy Father's might,
 To execute fierce vengeance on his foes,
 Not so on Man ; him thro' their malice fall'n, 400
 Father of Mercy and Grace, thou didst not doome
 So strictly, but much more to pity encline :
 No sooner did thy dear and only Son
 Perceive thee purpos'd not to doom frail Man
 So strictly, but much more to pity enclin'd, 405
 He to appease thy wrath, and end the Strife
 Of Mercy and Justice in thy face discern'd,
 Regardless of the Bliss wherein he sat
 Second to thee, offer'd himself to die
 For man's offence. O unexempl'd love, 410
 Love no where to be found less than Divine !
 Hail Son of God, Saviour of Men, thy Name
 Shall be the copious matter of my Song
 Henceforth, and never shall my Harp thy praise
 Forget, nor from thy Father's praise disjoyn. 415
 Thus they in Heav'n, above the starry Sphear,
 Their happy hours in joy and hymning spent.
 Mean while upon the firm opacous Globe
 Of this round World, whose first convex divides

The luminous inferior Orbs, enclos'd 425
 From *Chaos* and th' inroad of Darknes old,
Satan alighted walks : a Globe far off
 It seem'd, now seems a boundless Continent
 Dark, waste, and wild, under the frown of Night
 Startles expos'd, and ever-threatening storms 430
 Of *Chaos* blustering round, inclement Skie,
 Save on that side which from the wall of Heav'n
 Though distant far some small reflection gains
 Of glimmering air less vext with tempest loud :
 Here walk'd the Fiend at large in spacious field. 435
 As when a Vultur on *Imaus* bred,
 Whose snowy ridge the roving *Tartar* bounds,
 Dislodging from a Region scarce of prey
 To gorge the flesh of Lambs and yeanling Kids
 On Hills where Flocks are fed, flies toward the Springs
 Of *Ganges* or *Hydaspes*, *Indian* streams ; 440
 But in his way lights on the barren Plains
 Of *Sericana*, where *Chineses* drive
 With Sails and Wind their cany Waggon light :
 So on this windy Sea of Land, the Fiend 445
 Walk'd up and downe alone bent on his prey,
 Alone, for other Creature in this place
 Living or liveless to be found was none,
 None yet, but store hereafter from the earth
 Up hither like Aereal vapours flew 450
 Of all things transitory and vain, when Sin
 With vanity had fill'd the works of men :
 Both all things vain, and all who in vain things
 Built their fond hopes of Glory or lasting fame,

Or happiness in this or th' other life; 450
 All who have their reward on Earth, the fruits
 Of painful Superstition and blind Zeal,
 Naught seeking but the praise of men, here find
 Fit retribution, empty as their deeds;
 All th'unaccomplisht works of Nature's hand, 455
 Abortive, monstrous, or unkindly mixt,
 Dissolv'd on Earth, fleet hither, and in vain,
 Till final dissolution, wander here,
 Not in the neighb'ring Moon, as some have dream'd;
 Those argent Fields more likely habitants, 460
 Translated Saints, or middle Spirits hold
 Betwixt th' Angelical and Human kind:
 Hither of ill-joyn'd Sons and Daughters born
 First from the ancient World those Giants came
 With many a vain exploit, tho' then renown'd; 465
 The builders next of *Babel*, on the Plain
 Of *Sennaar*, and still with vain design
 New *Babels*, had they wherewithall, would build:
 Others came single; he who to be deem'd
 A God, leap'd fondly into *Aina* flames, 470
Empedocles, and he who to enjoy
Plato's Elysium, leap'd into the Sea,
Cleombrotus, and many more too long,
 Embryo's and Idiots, Eremites and Friars
 White, Black, and Grey, with all their trumpery. 475
 Here Pilgrims roam, that stray'd so far to seek
 In *Golgotha* him dead, who lives in Heav'n;
 And they who to be sure of Paradise
 Dying put on the weeds of *Dominica*

Or in *Franciscan* think to pass disguis'd ; 420
 They pass the Planets seven, and pass the fixt,
 And that CrySTALLINE Sphere whose ballance weighs
 The Trepidation talkt, and that first mov'd ;
 And now Saint *Peter* at Heav'n's Wicket seems
 To wait them with his Keys, and now at foot 425
 Of Heav'n's ascent they lift their Feet, when loe
 A violent cross wind from either Coast
 Blows them transverse ten thousand Leagues awry
 Into the devious Air ; then might ye see
 Cowles, Hoods and Habits with their wearers tost
 And flutter'd into Rags, then Reliques, Beads, 431
 Indulgences, Dispenses, Pardons, Bulls,
 The sport of Winds : all these upwhirl'd aloft
 Fly o'er the backside of the World far off
 Into a *Limbo* large and broad, since call'd 435
 The Paradise of Fools, to few unknown
 Long after, now unpeopl'd, and untrod ;
 All this dark Globe the Fiend found as he pass'd,
 And long he wander'd, till at last a gleame
 Of dawning light turn'd thither-ward in haste 500
 His travell'd steps ; far distant he descries
 Ascending by degrees magnificent
 Up to the wall of Heav'n a Structure high,
 At top whereof, but far more rich, appear'd
 The work as of a Kingly Palace Gate 505
 With Frontispiece of Diamond and Gold
 Imbellisht, thick with sparkling orient Gems
 The Portal shon, inimitable on Earth
 By Model, or by shading Pencil drawn.

The Stairs were such as whereon *Jacob* saw 510
 Angels ascending and descending, bands
 Of Guardians bright, when he from *Eſau* fled
 To *Padan-Aram* in the field of *Luz*,
 Dreaming by night under the open Skie,
 And waking cry'd, *This is the Gate of Heav'n*: 515
 Each Stair mysteriouſly was meant, nor ſtood
 There always, but drawn up to Heav'n ſometimes
 Viewleſs, and underneath a bright Sea flow'd
 Of *Jafper*, or of liquid *Pearl*, whereon
 Who after came from Earth, ſayling arriv'd, 520
 Waſted by Angels, or flew o'er the Lake
 Rapt in a Chariot drawn by fiery Steeds.
 The Stairs were then let down, whether to dare
 The Fiend by eaſie aſcent, or aggravate
 His ſad excluſion from the dores of *Blifs*. 525
 Direſt againſt which open'd from beneath,
 Juſt o'er the bliſſful ſeat of *Paradiſe*,
 A paſſage down to th' Earth, a paſſage wide
 Wider by far than that of after-times
 Over Mount *Sion*, and, though that were large, 530
 Over the *Promis'd Land* to God ſo dear,
 By which, to viſit oft thoſe happy Tribes,
 On high beſtells his Angels to and fro
 Paſſ'd frequent, and his eye with choice regard,
 From *Peneas* the fount of *Jordan's* flood 535
 To *Beerſaba*, where the *Holy Land*
 Borders on *Aegypt* and th' *Arabian* ſhore;
 So wide the op'ning ſeem'd, where bounds were ſet
 To darkneſs, ſuch as bound the Ocean wave.

Satan from hence now on the lower stair 540
 That scal'd by steps of Gold to Heav'n Gate
 Looks down with wonder at the sudden view
 Of all this World at once. As when a Scout
 Through dark and desert ways with peril gone
 All night; at last by break of chearful dawne 545
 Obtains the brow of some high-climbing Hill,
 Which to his eye discovers unaware
 The goodly prospect of some foreign land
 First seen, or some renown'd Metropolis
 With glistering Spires and Pinnacles adorn'd 550
 Which now the rising Sun gilds with his beams.
 Such wonder seis'd, though after Heaven seen,
 The Spirit maligne, but much more envy seis'd
 At sight of all this World beheld so fair.
 Round he surveys, and well might, where he stood
 So high above the circling Canopie 555
 Of Nights extended shade; from Eastern Point
 Of *Libra* to the fleecie Star that bears
Andromeda far off *Atlantic* Seas
 Beyond th' *Horizon*; then from Pole to Pole 560
 He views in breadth, and without longer pause
 Down right into the Worlds first Region throws
 His sight precipitant, and windes with ease
 Through the pure marble Air his oblique way
 Amongst innumerable Stars, that shon 565
 Stars distant, but nigh hand seem'd other Worlds,
 Or other Worlds they seem'd, or happy Isles,
 Like those *Hesperian* Gardens fam'd of old,
 Fortunate Fields, and Groves and flowry Vales,

Once happy Isles, but who dwelt happy there 570
 He stay'd not to enquire: above them all
 The golden Sun in splendor likest Heav'n
 Allur'd his eye: Thither his course he bends
 Through the calm Firmament; but up or down
 By center, or eccentric, hard to tell, 575
 Or Longitude, where the great Luminary
 Aloof the vulgar Constellations thick,
 That from his Lordly eye keep distance due,
 Dispenses light from far; they as they move
 Their starry Dance in numbers that compute 580
 Days, months and years, towards his all-charming
 Turn swift their various motions, or are turn'd [Lamp
 By his Magnetic beam, that gently warms
 The Universe, and to each inward part
 With gentle penetration, though-unseen, 585
 Shoots invisible virtue even to the deep;
 So wondrously was set his Station bright.
 There lands the Fiend, a spot like which perhaps
 Astronomer in the Sun's lucent Orb
 Through his glaz'd Optick Tube yet never saw. 590
 The place he found beyond expression bright,
 Compar'd with aught on Earth, Medal or Stone;
 Not all parts like, but all alike inform'd
 With radiant Light, as glowing Iron with fire;
 If metal, part seem'd Gold, part Silver clear; 595
 If stone, Carbuncle most or Chrysolite,
 Rubie or Topaz, to the Twelve that shon
 In Aaron's Breast-plate, and a stone besides
 Imagin'd rather oft than elsewhere seen,

That stone, or like to that which here below
 Philosophers in vain so long have sought,
 In vain, though by their powerful Art they bind
 Volatil *Hermes*, and call up unbound
 In various shapes old *Proteus* from the Sea,
 Drain'd through a Limbeck to his Native form. 60
 What wonder then if fields and regions here
 Breathe forth *Elixir* pure, and Rivers run
 Potable Gold, when with one virtuous touch
 Th' Arch-chimic Sun so far from us remote
 Produces with Terrestrial-Humor mixt 61
 Here in the dark so many precious things
 Of colour glorious and effect so rare?
 Here matter new to gaze the Devil met
 Undazl'd, far and wide his eye commands,
 For sight no obstacle found here, nor shade, 61½
 But all Sun-shine, as when his Beams at Noon
 Culminate from th' *Equator*, as they now
 Shot upward still direct, whence no way round
 Shadow from body opaque can fall, and the Air,
 No where so clear, sharp'nd his visual ray 62
 To objects distant far, whereby he soon
 Saw within kenn a glorious Angel stand,
 The same whom *John* saw also in the Sun:
 His back was turn'd, but not his brightness hid;
 Of beaming sunnie Raies, a golden tiar 62½
 Circl'd his Head, nor less his Locks behind
 Illustrious on his Shoulders sledge with wings
 Lay waving round; on some great charge employ'd
 He seem'd, or fixt in cogitation deep.

And was the Spirit impure as now in hope 630
 To find who might direct his wandring flight
 To Paradise the happy seat of Man,
 His journies end and our beginning woe.
 But first he casts to change his proper shape,
 Which else might work him danger or delay : 635
 And now a stripling Cherube he appears,
 Not of the prime, yet such as in his face
 Youth smil'd Celestial, and to every Limb
 Mutable grace diffus'd, so well he feign'd ;
 Under a Coronet his flowing haire 640
 In curls on either cheek plaid, wings he wore
 Of many a colour'd plume sprinkl'd with Gold,
 His Habit fit for speed succinct, and held
 Before his decent steps a Silver wand.
 He drew not nigh unheard, the Angel bright, 645
 E'er he drew nigh, his radiant visage turn'd,
 Admonisht by his ear, and strait was known
 Th' Arch-Angel *Uriel*, one of the seav'n
 Who in God's presence, nearest to his Throne
 Stand ready to command, and are his Eyes 650
 That run thro' all the Heav'ns, or down to th' Earth
 Bear his swift errands over moist and dry,
 O'er Sea and Land: him *Satan* thus accosts ;
Uriel, for thou of those seav'n Spirits that stand
 In light of God's high Throne, gloriously bright,
 The first art wont his great authentic will 656
 Interpreter through highest Heav'n to bring
 Where all his Sons thy Embassie attend ;
 And here art likeliest by supream decree

Like honour to obtain, and as his Eye
 To visit oft this new Creation round;
 Unspeakable desire to see, and know
 All these his wondrous works, but chiefly Man,
 His chief delight and favour, him for whom
 All these his works so wondrous he ordain'd, 660
 Hath brought me from the Quires of Cherubim
 Alone thus wandring. Brightest Seraph tell
 In which of all these shining Orbes hath Man
 His fixed seat, or fixed seat hath none,
 But all these shining Orbes his choice to dwell; 670
 That I may find him, and with secret gaze,
 Or open admiration him behold
 On whom the great Creator hath bestow'd
 Worlds, and on whom hath all these graces powr'd;
 That both in him and all things, as is meet, 675
 The Universal Maker we may praise;
 Who justly hath driv'n out his Rebell Foes
 To deepest Hell, and to repair their loss
 Created this new happy Race of Men
 To serve him better: wise are all his ways. 680

So spake the false dissembler unperceiv'd;
 For neither Man nor Angel can discern
 Hypocrisie, the only evil that walks
 Invisible, except to God alone,
 By his permissive will, through Heav'n and Earth:
 And oft though wisdom wake, suspicion sleeps 685
 At wisdom's Gate, and to simplicitie
 Relinquish her charge, while Goodness thinks no ill
 Where no ill seems: Which now for once beguil'd

Michael, though Regent of the Sun, and held 690
 the sharpest sighted Spirit of all in Heav'n;
 Who to the fraudulent Impostor foul
 in his uprightness answer thus return'd.
 Fair Angel, thy desire which tends to know
 The works of God, thereby to glorifie 695
 The great Work-Master, leads to no excess
 That reaches blame, but rather merits praise
 The more it seems excess, that led thee hither
 From thy Empyrean Mansion thus alone,
 To witness with thine eyes what some perhaps 700
 Contented with report hear only in Heav'n:
 For wonderful indeed are all his works,
 Pleasant to know, and worthiest to be all
 Had in remembrance always with delight,
 But what created mind can comprehend 705
 Their number, or the wisdom infinite
 That brought them forth, but hid their causes deep.
 I saw when at his Word the formless Mass,
 This world's material mould, came to a heap:
 Confusion heard his voice, and wild uproar 710
 Stood rul'd, stood vast infinitude confin'd;
 Till at his second bidding darkness fled,
 Light shon, and order from disorder sprung:
 Swift to their several Quarters hasted then
 The cumbrous Elements, Earth, Flood, Aire, Fire, 715
 And the Ethereal quintessence of Heav'n
 Flew upward, spirited with various forms,
 That rowl'd orbicular, and turn'd to Stars
 Numberless, as thou seest, and how they move;

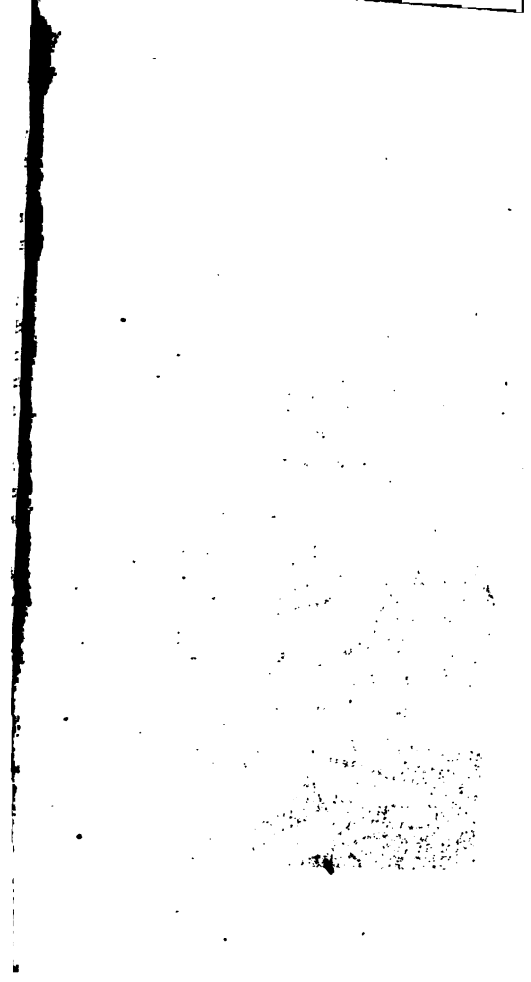
Each had his place appointed, each his course,
The rest in circuit walls this Universe.

Look downward on that Globe whose hither side
With light from hence, tho' but reflected, shines;
That place is Earth the seat of Man, that light
His day, which else as th' other Hemisphere
Night would invade, but there the neighbouring Moon
(So call that opposite fair Star) her aid
Timely interposes, and her monthly round
Still ending, still renewing, through mid Heav'n
With borrow'd light her countenance triform
Hence fills and empties to enlighten th' Earth,
And in her pale dominion checks the night.
That spot to which I point is *Paradise*,
Adam's abode, those loftie shades his *Bowre*.

Thy way thou canst not miss, me mine requires. 738

Thus said, he turn'd, and *Satan* bowing low,
As to superior Spirits is wont in Heav'n,
Where honour due and reverence none neglects,
Took leave, and toward the coast of Earth beneath,
Down from th' Ecliptic, sped with hop'd success, 740
Throws his steep flight in many an Aerie wheel,
Nor staid, till on *Niphates* top he lights.

The End of the Third Book.







Paradise Lost.

BOOK IV.

THE ARGUMENT.

Satan now in prospect of Eden, and nigh the place where he must now attempt the bold enterprize which he undertook alone against God and Man, falls into many doubts with himself, and many passions, fear, envy, and despaire; but at length confirms himself in evil, journeyes on to Paradise, whose outward prospect and scituation is described, overleaps the bounds, sits in the shape of a Cormorant on the Tree of life, as highest in the Garden to look about him. The Garden describ'd; Satan's first sight of Adam and Eve; his wonder at their excellent form and happy state, but with resolution to work their fall; overhears their discourse, thence gathers that

the Tree of knowledge was forbidden them to eat of, under penalty of death; and thereon intends to found Temptation, by seducing them to transgress: then leaves them a while, to know further of their state by some other means. Mean while Uriel descending on a Sun-beam warns Gabriel, who had in charge the Gate of Paradise, that some evil spirit had escap'd the Deity, and past at Noon by his Sphere in the shape of a good Angel down to Paradise, discovered afterwards by his furious gesture in the Mount. Gabriel promises to find him e'er morning. Night coming on, Adam and Eve discourse of going to their rest: their Bower describ'd; their Evening worship. Gabriel drawing forth his Bands of Night-watch to walk the round of Paradise, appoints two strong Angels to guard Adam's Bower, lest the evil spirit should be there doing some harm to Adam or Eve sleeping; there they find him at the ear of Eve, tempting her in a dream, and bring him, tho' unwilling, to Gabriel; by whom question'd, he scornfully answers, prepares resistance, but hinder'd by a Sign from Heaven, flies out of Paradise.

For that warning voice, which he who saw
 Th' *Apocalyps*, heard cry in Heav'n aloud,
 When the Dragon, put to second rout,
 Came furious down to be reveng'd on men,
 To the inhabitants on Earth! that now, 5
 While time was, our first-Parents had been warn'd
 Of the coming of their secret foe, and scap'd
 Scap'd so scap'd his mortal snare; for now
 Satan, now first inflam'd with rage, came down,
 The Tempter e'er th' Accuser of mankind, 10
 To wreck on innocent frail man his loss
 Of that first Battel, and his flight to Hell:
 Yet not rejoycing in his speed, though bold,
 Far off and fearless, nor with cause to boast,
 Begins his dire attempt, which nigh the birth 15
 Now rowling, boiles in his tumultuous brest,
 And like a devillish Engine back recoiles
 Upon himself; horror and doubt distraet
 His troubl'd thoughts; and from the bottom stir
 The Hell within him, for within him Hell 20
 He brings, and round about him, nor from Hell
 One step no more than from himself can fly
 By change of place: Now conscience wakes despair
 That slumber'd, wakes the bitter memorie
 Of what he was, what is, and what must be 25
 Worse; of worse deeds worse sufferings must ensue.
 Sometimes towards *Eden* which now in his view
 Lay pleasant, his griev'd look he fixes sad,
 Sometimes towards Heav'n and the full blazing Sun

Which now sat high in his Meridian Towre :
Then much revolving, thus in sighs began.

O thou that with surpassing Glory crown'd,
Look'st from thy sole Dominion like the God
Of this new World; at whose sight all the Stars
Hide their diminisht heads; to thee I call,
But with no friendly voice, and add thy name
O Sun, to tell thee how I hate thy beams
That bring to my remembrance from what state
I fell, how glorious once above thy Spheare;
Till Pride and worse Ambition threw me down
Warring in Heav'n against Heav'n's matchless King:
Ah wherefore! he deserv'd no such return
From me, whom he created what I was
In that bright eminence, and with his good
Upbraided none; nor was his service hard.
What could be less than to afford him praise,
The easiest recompence, and pay him thanks,
How due! yet all his good prov'd ill in me,
And wrought but malice; lifted up so high
I 'sdein'd subjection, and thought one step higher so
Would set me highest, and in a moment quit
The debt immense of endless gratitude,
So burthensome still paying, still to owe;
Forgetful what from him I still receiv'd,
And understood not that a grateful mind
By owing owes not, but still pays, at once
Indebted and discharg'd; what burden then!
O had his powerful Destiny ordain'd
Me some inferiour Angel, I had stood

Then happy ; no unbounded hope had rais'd 60
 Ambition. Yet why not ? some other Power
 As great might have aspir'd, and me though mean
 Drawn to his part ; but other Powers as great
 Fell not, but stand unshak'n, from within
 Or from without, to all temptations arm'd. 65
 Hadst thou the same free Will and Power to stand ?
 Thou hadst : whom hast thou then or what to accuse,
 But Heav'n's free Love dealt equally to all ?
 Be then his Love accurst, since love or hate,
 To me alike, it deals eternal woe, 70
 Nay curs'd be thou ; since against his thy will
 Chose freely what it now so justly rues.
 Me miserable ! which way shall I flie
 Infinite wrauth, and infinite despair ?
 Which way I flie is Hell ; my self am Hell ; 75
 And in the lowest deep a lower deep
 Still threatening to devour me opens wide,
 To which the Hell I suffer seems a Heav'n.
 O then at last relent : is there no place
 Left for Repentance, none for Pardon left ? 80
 None left but by submission ; and that word
Disdain forbids me, and my dread of shame
 Among the spirits beneath, whom I seduc'd
 With other promises and other vaunts
 Than to submit, boasting I could subdue 85
 Th' Omnipotent. Ay me, they little know
 How dearly I abide that boast so vaine,
 Under what torments inwardly I groane ;
 While they adore me on the Throne of Hell.

With Diadem and Scepter high advanc'd
 The lower still I fall, only Supream
 In misery; such joy Ambition finds.
 But say I could repent and could obtaine
 By Act of Grace my former state; how soon
 Would heighth recal high thoughts, how soon unsay
 What feign'd submission swore: ease would recant 96
 Vows made in pain, as violent and void.
 For never can true reconcilment grow
 Where wounds of deadly hate have pierc'd so deep,
 Which would but lead me to a worse relapse 100
 And heavier fall; so should I purchase dear
 Short intermission bought with double smart.
 This knows my punisher; therefore as far
 From granting he, as I from begging peace:
 All hope excluded thus, behold in stead 105
 Of us out-cast, exil'd, his new delight,
 Mankind created, and for him this World.
 So farewell Hope, and with Hope farewell Fear,
 Farewell Remorse: all Good to me is lost:
 Evil be thou my Good; by thee at least 110
 Divided Empire with Heav'ns King I hold
 By thee, and more than half perhaps will reigne;
 As Man e'er long, and this new World shall know.

Thus while he spake, each passion dimm'd his face
 Thrice chang'd with pale, ire, envie and despaire,
 Which marr'd his borrow'd visage, and betray'd 116
 Him counterfeit, if any eye beheld.
 For heav'nly mindes from such distempers foule
 Are ever clear. Whereof he soon aware,

Each perturbation smooth'd with outward calme,
Artificer of Fraud, and was the first 121

That practis'd falshood under faintly shew,
Deep malice to conceale, coucht with revenge:
Yet not enough had practis'd to deceive
Uriel once warn'd; whose eye pursu'd him down 125

The way he went, and on th' *Affyrian* mount
Saw him disfigur'd, more than could befall
Spirit of happy sort: his gestures fierce
He mark'd and mad demeanour, then alone,
As he suppos'd, all unobserv'd, unseen. 130

So on he fares, and to the border comes,
Of *Eden*, where delicious Paradise,
Now nearer, Crowns with her enclosure green,
As with a rural mound the champain head
Of a steep wilderness whose hairie sides 135

With thicket overgrown, grotesque and wilde,
Access deny'd; and over head up grew
Insuperable heighth of loftiest shade,
Cedar, and Pine, and Firr, and branching Palm,
A Silvan Scene, and as the ranks ascend 140

Shade above Shade, a woody Theatre
Of stateliest view. Yet higher than their tops
The verdurous wall of Paradise up sprung:
Which to our general Sire gave prospect large
Into his neather Empire neighbouring round. 145

And higher than that Wall a circling row
Of goodliest Trees laden with fairest Fruit,
Blossoms and Fruits at once of golden hue
Appear'd, with gay enamel'd colours mixt:

On which the Sun more glad impress'd his beams 15
 Than in fair Evening Cloud, or humid Bow,
 When God hath show'd the earth; so lovely seem'd
 That Lantskip: And of pure now purer air
 Meets his approach, and to the heart inspires
 Vernal delight and joy, able to drive 155
 All sadness but despair: now gentle gales
 Fanning their odoriferous wings dispense
 Native perfumes, and whisper whence they stole
 Those balmie spoiles. As when to them who saile
 Beyond the *Cape of Hope*, and now are past 160
Mozambic, off at Sea North-East winds blow
Sabea Odour from the spicie shore
 Of *Arabie* the blest, with such delay
 Well pleas'd they slack their course, and many a League
 Chear'd with the grateful smell old Ocean smiles. 165
 So entertain'd those odorous sweets the Fiend
 Who came their bane, though with them better pleas'd
 Than *Asmodeus* with the fishie fume,
 That drove him, though enamour'd, from the Spouse
 Of *Tobit's* Son, and with a vengeance sent 170
 From *Media* post to *Egypt*, there fast bound.

Now to th'ascent of that steep savage Hill
Satan had journied on, pensive and slow;
 But further way found none, so thick entwin'd,
 As one continu'd brake, the undergrowth 175
 Of shrubs and tangling bushes had perplex'd
 All path of Man or Beast that past that way:
 One Gate there only was, and that look'd East
 On th'other side: which when th'arch-fellon saw

The entrance he disdain'd, and in contempt, 180
 At one slight bound high over leap'd all bound
 Of Hill or highest Wall, and sheer within
 Lights on his feet. As when a prowling Wolfe,
 Whom hunger drives to seek new haunt for prey,
 Watching where Shepherds pen their Flocks at eve
 In hurd'd Cotes amid the field secure, 186
 Leaps o'er the fence with ease into the Fould:
 Or as a Thief bent to unhoo'd the cash
 Of some rich Burgher, whose substantial dores,
 Cross-bar'd and bolted fast, fear no assault, 19
 In at the window climbs, or o'er the tiles;
 So clomb this first grand Thief into God's Fould;
 So since into his Church lewd Hirelings clime.
 Thence up he flew, and on the Tree of Life
 The middle Tree and highest there that grew, 195
 Sat like a Cormorant; yet not true Life
 Thereby regain'd, but sat devising Death
 To them who liv'd; nor on the virtue thought
 Of that life-giving Plant, but only us'd
 For prospect, what well us'd had been the plodge
 Of immortality. So little knows 201
 Any, but God alone, to value right
 The good before him, but perverts best things
 To worst abuse, or to their meanest use.
 Beneath him with new wonder now he views 205
 To all delight of human Sense expos'd
 In narrow room Nature's whole wealth, yea more,
 A Heav'n on Earth, for blissful Paradise
 Of God the Garden was, by him in the East

Of *Eden* planted; *Eden* stretch'd her Line
 From *Auran* Eastward to the Royal Towns
 Of great *Selencin*; built by *Grecian* Kings,
 Or where the Sons of *Eden* long before
 Dwelt in *Telassar*: in this pleasant soile
 His far more pleasant Garden God ordain'd; 20
 Out of the fertil ground he caus'd to grow
 All Trees of noblest kind for sight, smell, taste;
 And all amid them stood the Tree of Life,
 High eminent, blooming Ambrosial Fruit
 Of vegetable Gold; and next to Life, 25
 Our Death the Tree of knowledge grew fast by,
 Knowledge of Good bought dear by knowing ill.
 Southward through *Eden* went a River large,
 Nor chang'd his course, but through the shaggie hill
 Pass'd underneath ingulf't, for God had thrown 225
 That Mountain as his Garden mould high rais'd
 Upon the rapid current, which through veins
 Of porous Earth with kindly thirst up drawn,
 Rose a fresh Fountain, and with many a rill
 Water'd the Garden; thence united fell 230
 Down the steep glade, and met the neather Floud
 Which from the darksome passage now appears,
 And now divided into four main Streams,
 Runs divers, wandring many a famous Realm
 And Country whereof here needs no account, 235
 But rather to tell how, if Art could tell,
 How from that Saphire Fount the crisped Brooks,
 Rowling on Orient Pearl and sands of Gold,
 With mazie error under pendant shades

An Nectar, visiting each plant, and fed 240
 Flours worthy of Paradise which not nice Art
 In Beds and curious Knots, but Nature boon
 Pow'rd forth profuse on Hill and Dale and Plain,
 Beth where the morning Sun first warmly smote
 The open field, and where the unpierc'd shade 245
 Imbround the noontide Bows: Thus was this place,
 A happy rural seat of various view; [and Balme,
 Groves whose rich Trees wept odorous Gumms
 Others whose fruit burnisht with Golden Rinde
 Hung amiable, *Hesperian* Fables true, 250
 If true, here only, and of delicious taste:
 Betwixt them Lawns, or level Downs, and Flocks.
 Grazing the tender herb, were interpos'd,
 Or palmie hillock, or the flourie lap
 Of some irriguous valley spred her flore, 255
 Flours of all hue, and without Thorn the Rose:
 Another side, umbrageous Grotts and Caves.
 Of cool recess, o'er which the mantling vine
 Lays forth her purple Grape, and gently creeps
 Luxuriant; mean while murmuring waters fall 260
 Down the slope hills, dispers'd, or in a Lake,
 That to the fringed Bank with Myrtle crown'd,
 Her chrystal mirror holds, unite their streams.
 The Birds their quire apply; aires, vernal aires,
 Breathing the smell of field and grove, attune 265
 The trembling leaves, while Universal Pan
 Knit with the *Graces* and the *Hours* in dance.
 Led on th' Eternal Spring. Not that fair field
 Of *Enna*, where *Proserpin* gathering flours

Her self a fairer Flour by gloomy *Dis* 25
 Was gather'd, which cost *Ceres* all that pain
 To seek her thro' the world; nor that sweet Gro
 Of *Daphne* by *Orentes*, and th' inspir'd
Castalian Spring, might with this Paradise
 Of *Eden* strive; nor that *Nyfsian* Isle 27
 Girt with the River *Triton*, where old *Cham*,
 Whom Gentiles *Ammon* call and *Lybian* Jove,
 Hid *Amalthea* and her Florid Son
 Young *Bacchus* from his Stepdame *Rhea*'s eye;
 Nor where *Abassin* Kings their issue Guard, 280
 Mount *Amara*, though this by some suppos'd
 True Paradise under the *Ethiop* Line
 By *Nilus* head, enclos'd with shining Rock,
 A whole days journey high, but wide remote
 From this *Assyrian* Garden, where the Fiend 285
 Saw undelighted all delight, all kind
 Of living Creatures new to sight and strange;
 Two of far nobler shape erect and tall,
 Godlike erect, which native Honour clad
 In naked Majesty seem'd Lords of all, 290
 And worthy seem'd, for in their looks Divine
 The image of their glorious Maker shon,
 Truth, Wisdom, Sanctitude severe and pure,
 Severe but in true filial freedom plac'd;
 Whence true authority in men; though both 295
 Not equal, as their sex not equal seem'd;
 For contemplation he and valour form'd,
 For softness she and sweet attractive Grace,
 He for God only, she for God in him:

A fair large Front and Eye sublime declar'd 300
 Absolute rule; and Hyacinthin Locks
 Sound from his parted forelock manly hung
 Clustering, but not beneath his shoulders broad:
 He as a vail down to the slender waste
 Her unadorned golden tresses wore 305
 Dishevel'd, but in wanton ringlets wav'd
 As the Vine curls her tendrils, which impli'd
 Subjection, but requir'd with gentle sway,
 And by her yielded, by him best receiv'd,
 Yielded with coy submission, modest pride, 310
 And sweet reluctant amorous delay.
 Nor those mysterious parts were then conceal'd,
 Then was not guilty shame, dishonest shame
 Of natures works, honor dishonorable,
 Sin-bred, how have ye troubl'd all mankind 315
 With shews instead, meer shews of seeming pure,
 And banish'd from mans life his happiest life,
 Simplicitie and spotless innocence.
 So pass'd they naked on, nor shun'd the sight
 Of God or Angel, for they thought no ill: 320
 So hand in hand they pass'd, the loviest pair
 That ever since in loves embraces met,
 Adam the goodliest man of men since born
 His Sons, the fairest of her Daughters Eve.
 Under a tuft of shade that on a green 325
 Stood whispering soft, by a fresh Fountain side.
 They sat them down, and after no more toil
 Of their sweet Gardning labour than suffic'd.
 To recommend coole Zephyr, and made ease

More easie, wholsom thirst and appetite
 More grateful, to their Supper Fruits they fell,
 Nectarine Fruits which the compliant boughes
 Yielded them, side-long as they sat recline
 On the soft downie Bank damaskt with flours:
 The savoury pulp they chew, and in the rinde 335
 Still as they thirsted scoop the brimming stream:
 Nor gentle purpose, nor endearing smiles
 Wanted, nor youthful dalliance as beseems
 Fair couple, linkt in happy nuptial League,
 Alone as they. About them frisking plaid 340
 All Beasts of th'Earth, since wild, and of all chase
 In Wood or Wilderness, Forrest or Den;
 Sporting the Lion ramp'd, and in his paw
 Dandl'd the Kid; Bears, Tygers, Ounces, Pards,
 Gambol'd before them, th'unwieldy Elephant 345
 To make them mirth us'd all his might, and wreath'd
 His Lithe Proboscis; close the Serpent fly
 Insinuating, wove with Gordian twine
 His breaded train, and of his fatal guile
 Gave proof unheeded; others on the grass 350
 Coucht, and now fill'd with pasture gazing sat,
 Or Bedward ruminating: for the Sun
 Declin'd was hasting now with prone career
 To th'Ocean Isles, and in th'ascending Scale
 Of Heav'n the Stars that usher Evening rose: 355
 When *Satan* still in gaze, as first he stood,
 Scarce thus at length fail'd speech recover'd sad.
 O Hell! what do mine eyes with grief behold,
 Into our room of bliss thus high advanc'd

Creatures of other mould, earth-born perhaps, 360
 Not Spirits, yet to heav'nly Spirits bright
 Little inferior; whom my thoughts pursue
 With wonder, and could love, so lively shines
 In them Divine Resemblance, and such grace
 The hand that form'd 'em on their shape hath pour'd.
 Ah gentle pair, ye little think how nigh 366
 Your change approaches, when all these delights
 Will vanish and deliver ye to woe,
 More woe, the more your taste is now of joy;
 Happy, but for so happy ill secur'd 370
 Long to continue, and this high seat your Heav'n
 Ill fenc'd for Heav'n to keep out such a foe
 As now is enter'd; yet no purpos'd foe
 To you whom I could pity thus forlorn
 Though I unpitied: League with you I seek, 375
 And mutual amity so freight, so close
 That I with you must dwell, or you with me
 Henceforth; my dwelling haply may not please
 Like this fair Paradise, your sense, yet such
 Accept your Makers work; he gave it me, 380
 Which I as freely give; Hell shall unfold,
 To entertain you two, her widest Gates,
 And send forth all her Kings; there will be room,
 Not like these narrow limits, to receive
 Your numerous offspring; if no better place, 385
 Thank him who puts me loath, to this revenge
 On you who wrong me not, for him who wrong'd.
 And should I at your harmless innocence
 Melt, as I doe, yet public reason just,

Honour and Empire with revenge enlarg'd, 39
 By conquering this new World, compels me now
 To do what else though damn'd I should abhorre

So spake the Fiend, and with necessity,
 The Tyrants plea, excus'd his devilish deeds,
 Then from his lofty stand on that high Tree 39
 Down he alights among the sportful Herd
 Of these four-footed kindes, himself now one,
 Now other, as their shape serv'd best his end
 Nearer to view his prey, and unesp'd

To mark what of their state he more might learn 400
 By word or action markt: about them round.

A Lion now he stalks with fierie glare,
 Then as a Tyger, who by chance hath spi'd
 In some Purlicu two gentle Fawnes at play,
 Strait couches close, then rising changes oft 405
 His couchant watch, as one who chose his ground
 Whence rushing he might surest seize them both
 Grip'd in each paw: When ~~Adam~~ first of men
 To first of Women ~~Eve~~ thus moving speech,
 Turn'd him all ear to hear now utterance flow. 410

Sole partner and sole part of all these joyes,
 Dearer thy self then all; needs must the power
 That made us, and for us this ample World,
 Be infinitely good, and of his good
 As liberal and free as infinite, 415
 That rais'd us from the dust and plac'd us here
 In all this happiness, who at his hand
 Have nothing merited, nor can perform
 Aught whereof he hath need, he who requires

From us no other service than to keep 420
 This one, this easie charge, of all the Trees
 In Paradise that bear delicious fruit
 So various, not to taste that only Tree
 Of knowledge, planted by the Tree of Life,
 So near grows Death to Life, whate'er Death is, 425
 Some dreadful thing no doubt; for well thou know'st
 God hath pronounc'd it death to taste that Tree,
 The only sign of our obedience left
 Among so many signs of power and rule
 Confer'd upon us, and Dominion giv'n 430
 Over all other Creatures that possess
 Earth, Aire, and Sea. Then let us not think hard
 One easie prohibition, who enjoy
 Free leave so large to all things else, and choice
 Unlimited of manifold delights : 435
 But let us ever praise him, and extoll
 His bounty, following our delightful task
 To prune those growing Plants, and tend these Flours,
 Which were it toilsom, yet with thee were sweet.
 To whom thus Eve repli'd. O thou for whom 440
 And from whom I was form'd flesh of thy flesh
 And without whom am to no end, my Guide
 And Head, what thou hast said is just and right.
 For we to him indeed all praises owe,
 And daily thanks, I chiefly who enjoy 445
 So far the happier Lot, enjoying thee
 Preminent by so much odds, while thou
 Like consort to thy self canst no where find.
 That day I oft remember, when from sleep

I first awak'd, and found my self repos'd
 Under a shade of flours, much wondering where
 And what I was, whence thither brought, and how
 Not distant far from thence a murmuring sound
 Of waters issu'd from a Cave and spread
 Into a liquid Plain, then stood unmov'd
 Pure as th'expanse of Heav'n; I thither went
 With unexperienc'd thought, and laid me down
 On the green bank, to look into the clear
 Smooth Lake, that to me seem'd another Skie.
 As I bent down to look, just opposite,
 A Shape within the watry gleam appear'd
 Bending to look on me, I started back,
 It started back, but pleas'd I soon return'd;
 Pleas'd it return'd as soon with answering looks
 Of sympathy and love; there I had fixt
 Mine eyes till now, and pin'd with vain desire,
 Had not a voice thus warn'd me, What thou seest,
 What there thou seest fair Creature is thy self,
 With thee it came and goes: but follow me;
 And I will bring thee where no shadow stays
 Thy coming, and thy soft imbraces, he
 Whose image thou art, him thou shalt enjoy
 Inseparably thine, to him shalt bear
 Multitudes like thy self, and thence be call'd
 Mother of human Race: What could I doe,
 But follow streight, invisibly thus led?
 Till I espy'd thee, fair indeed and tall,
 Under a Plantan, yet methought less fair;
 Less winning soft, less amiably mild,

From that smooth watry image; back I turn'd, 480
 Thou following cry'd'st aloud, Return fair *Eve*,
 Whom fly'st thou? whom thou fly'st, of him thou art,
 Of flesh, his bone; to give thee being I lent
 Part of my side to thee, nearest my heart
 Substantial Life, to have thee by my side 485
 Henceforth an individual solace dear;
 Part of my Soul I seek thee, and thee claim
 My other half: with that thy gentle hand
 Seis'd mine, I yielded, and from that time see
 How beauty is excell'd by manly grace 490
 And wisdom, which alone is truly fair.

So spake our general Mother, and with eyes
 Of conjugal attraction unprov'd,
 And meek surrender, half embracing lean'd
 On our first Father, half her swelling Breast 495
 Naked met his under the flowing Gold
 Of her loose tresses hid: he in delight
 Both of her Beauty and submissive Charms
 Smil'd with superior Love, as *Jupiter*
 On *Juno* smiles, when he impregns the clouds 500
 That shed *May* Flow'rs; and press'd her Matron lip
 With kisses pure: aside the Devil turn'd
 For envy, yet with jealous leer malign
 Ey'd them askance, and to himself thus plain'd.

Sight hateful, sight tormenting! thus these two
 Imparadis'd in one anothers arms 506
 The happier *Eden*, shall enjoy their fill
 Of bliss on bliss, while I to Hell am thrust,
 Where neither joy nor love, but fierce desire,

Among our other torments not the least,
 Still unfulfill'd with pain of longing pines;
 Yet let me not forget what I have gain'd
 From their own mouths; all is not theirs it seems
 One fatal Tree there stands of Knowledge call'd
 Forbidding them to taste; Knowledge forbid
 Suspicious, reasonless. Why should their Lord
 Envy them that? can it be sin to know?
 Can it be death? and do they only stand
 By Ignorance, is that their happy state,
 The proof of their obedience and their faith?
 O fair foundation laid whereon to build
 Their ruin! Hence I will excite their minds
 With more desire to know, and to reject
 Envious commands, invented with design
 To keep them low whom Knowledge might exalt
 Equal with Gods; aspiring to be such,
 They taste and die: what likelier can ensue?
 But first with narrow search I must walk round
 This Garden, and no corner leave unspy'd;
 A chance but chance may lead where I may meet
 Some wandering Spirit of Heav'n by Fountain side,
 Or in thick shade retir'd, from him to draw
 What further would be learnt. Live while ye may
 Yet happy pair; enjoy, till I return,
 Short pleasures, for long woes are to succeed.

So saying, his proud step he scornful turn'd,
 But with sly circumspection, and began [his roam.
 Through wood, through waste, o'er hill, o'er dale
 Mean while in utmost Longitude, where Heav'n

Earth and Ocean meets, the setting Sun 540
 By descended, and with right aspect
 In the eastern Gate of Paradise
 Shew'd his evening Rayes: it was a Rock
 Of Alabaster, pil'd up to the Clouds,
 Promiscuous far, winding with one ascent 545
 Accessible from Earth, one entrance high;
 The rest was craggie cliff, that overhung
 As it rose, impossible to climb.
 Twixt these rockie Pillars *Gabriel* sat
 Chief of th' Angelic Guards, awaiting night; 550
 About him exercis'd Heroic Games
 An unarmed Youth of Heav'n, but nigh at hand
 Celestial Armoury, Shields, Helms, and Spears,
 Laying high with Diamond flaming, and with Gold-
 Spheres came *Uriel*, gliding through the Eeven 555
 In a Sun beam, swift as a shooting Star
 In *Autumn* thwarts the night, when vapors fir'd
 Impress the Air, and shews the Mariner
 From what point of his Compass to beware
 Impetuous winds: he thus began in haste. 560
Gabriel, to thee thy course by Lot hath giv'n
 Charge and strict watch that to this happy place
 No evil thing approach or enter in;
 This day at height of Noon came to my Sphere
 A Spirit, zealous, as he seem'd, to know 565
 More of th' Almighty's works, and chiefly Man,
 God's latest Image: I describ'd his way
 Bent all on speed, and mark'd his Aerie Gate:
 But in the Mount that lies from Eden North

Where he first lighted, soon discern'd his look
 Alien from Heav'n, with passions foul obscur'd
 Mine eye pursu'd him still, but under shade
 Lost sight of him ; one of the banisht crew
 I fear, hath ventur'd from the deep to raise
 New troubles; him thy care must be to find.

To whom the winged Warriour thus return'd
Uriel, no wonder if thy perfect sight,
 Amid the Sun's bright circle where thou sittest,
 See far and wide : in at this Gate none pass
 The vigilance here plac'd, but such as come
 Well known from Heav'n; and since Meridian hour
 No Creature thence: if Spirit of other sort,
 So minded, have o'erleapt these earthie bounds
 On purpose, hard thou know'st it to exclude
 Spiritual substance with corporeal bar.
 But if within the circuit of these walks,
 In whatsoever shape he lurk, of whom
 Thou tell'st, by morrow dawning I shall know.

So promis'd he, and *Uriel* to his charge
 Return'd on that bright beam, whose point now rais'd
 Bore him slope downward to the Sun now fall'n
 Beneath th' *Azores*; whither the prime Orb,
 Incredible how swift, had thither rowl'd
 Diurnal, or this less volubil Earth
 By shorter flight to th' East, and left him there
 Arraying with reflected Purple and Gold
 The Clouds that on his Western Throne attend:
 Now came still Evening on, and Twilight gray
 Had in her sober Livery all things clad;

accompanied, for Beast and Bird 600
 to their grassie Couch, these to their Nests
 slunk, all but the wakeful Nightingale;
 all night long her amorous descant sung;
 was pleas'd: now glow'd the Firmament
 with living Saphirs: *Hesperus* that led 605
 the starry Host, rode brightest, till the Moon
 rising in clouded Majesty, at length
 her parent Queen unvail'd her peerless light,
 and o'er the dark her Silver Mantle threw.
 When *Adam* thus to *Eve*: Fair Consort, th' hour
 of night, and all things now retir'd to rest 610
 find us of like repose, since God hath set
 labour and rest, as day and night to men
 successive, and the timely dew of sleep
 now falling with soft slumbrous weight inclines 615
 our eye-lids; other Creatures all day long
 have idle unemploy'd, and less need rest;
 Man hath his daily work of body or mind
 appointed, which declares his Dignity,
 and the regard of Heav'n on all his ways; 620
 While other Animals unactive range,
 And of their doings God takes no account.
 To morrow e'er fresh morning streak the East
 With first approach of light, we must be ris'n,
 And at our pleasant labour, to reform 625
 Yon flowry Arbours, yonder Allies green,
 Our walk at noon, with branches overgrown,
 That mock our scant manuring, and require
 More hands than ours to lop their wanton growth:

118 PARADISE LOST. BOOK

Those Blossoms also, and those dropping Gums,
 That lie bestrown unlightly and unsmooth,
 Ask riddance, if we mean to tread with ease;
 Mean while; as Nature wills, Night bids us rest.
 To whom thus Eve with perfect beauty add
 My Author and Disposer, what thou bidst
 Unargu'd I obey; so God ordains,
 God is thy Law, thou mine: to know no more
 Is woman's happiest knowledge and her praise.
 With thee conversing I forget all time,
 All seasons and their change, all please alike.
 Sweet is the breath of morn, her rising sweet,
 With charm of earliest Birds; pleasant the Sun
 When first on this delightful Land he spreads
 His orient Beams, on herb, tree, fruit, and flower,
 Glistering with dew; fragrant the fertile Earth
 After soft showers; and sweet the coming on
 Of grateful Evening mild, the silent Night
 With this her solemn Bird, and this fair Moon,
 And these the Gems of Heav'n, her starry train:
 But neither breath of Morn, when she ascends
 With charm of earliest Birds, nor rising Sun
 On this delightful land, nor herb, fruit, flower,
 Glistering with dew, nor fragrance after showers,
 Nor grateful Evening mild, nor silent Night,
 With this her solemn Bird, nor walk by Moon
 Or glittering Star-light without thee is sweet.
 But wherefore all night long shine these, for whom
 This glorious sight, when sleep hath shut all eyes?
 To whom our general Ancestor reply'd.

Father of God and Man, accomplish *Eve*, 660
 We have their course to finish, round the Earth,
 Tomorrow Evening, and from Land to Land
 Order, though to Nations yet unborn,
 Shifting light prepar'd, they set and rise;
 That total darkness should by Night regain 665
 Their old possession, and extinguish life
 Of Nature and all things, which these soft fires
 Not only enlighten, but with kindly heat
 Of various influence foment and warm;
 To temper or nourish, or in part shed down 670
 Their stellar virtue on all kinds that grow
 In Earth, made hereby apter to receive
 Perfection from the Sun's more potent Ray.
 These then, though unbeheld in deep of night, 674
 Shine not in vain, nor think, though men were none,
 That Heav'n would want spectators, God want praise;
 Millions of spiritual Creatures walk the Earth
 Unseen, both when we wake, and when we sleep:
 All these with ceaseless praise his Works behold
 Both day and night: how often from the steep 680
 Of echoing Hill or Thicket have we heard
 Celestial voices to the midnight air,
 Sole, or responsive to each others note
 Singing their great Creator: oft in bands
 While they keep watch, or nightly rounding walk,
 With Heav'nly touch of instrumental sounds 686
 In full harmonic number join'd, their songs
 Divide the night, and lift our thoughts to Heaven.
 Thus talking hand in hand alone they pass'd

On to their blissful Bower ; it was a place
 Chos'n by the sov'reign Planer, when he fram'd
 All things to man's delightful use ; the roof
 Of thickest covert was inwoven shade
 Laurel and Mirtle, and what higher grew
 Of firm and fragrant leaf ; on either side
Acanthus, and each odorous bushy shrub
 Fenc'd up the verdant wall ; each beauteous flower
Iris all hues, *Roses*, and *Gessamin*
 Rear'd high their flourish't heads between, and wrought
 Mosaic ; underfoot the Violet,
 Crocus, and Hyacinth with rich inlay
 Border'd the ground, more colour'd than with stone
 Of costliest Emblem : other Creature here
 Beast, Bird, Insect, or Worm durst enter none ;
 Such was their awe of Man. In shady Bower
 More sacred and sequester'd, though but feign'd,
Pan or *Sylvanus* never slept, nor Nymph,
 Nor *Faunus* haunted. Here in close recess
 With Flowers, Garlands, and sweet-smelling Herbs
 Espoused *Eve* deckt first her nuptial Bed,
 And Heav'nly Quires the Hymenzan sung,
 What day the genial Angel to our Sire
 Brought her in naked Beauty more adorn'd,
 More lovely than *Pandora*, whom the Gods
 Endow'd with all their gifts, and O too like
 In sad event, when to th' unwiser Son
 Of *Japhet* brought by *Hermes*, she ensnar'd
 Mankind with her fair looks, to be aveng'd
 On him who had stole *Jove's* authentic fire.

Thus

Thus at their shady Lodge arriv'd, both stood, 729
 Both turn'd, and under open Sky ador'd
 The God that made both Sky, Air, Earth and Heav'n,
 Which they beheld, the Moon's resplendent Globe
 And starry Pole: Thou also mad'st the Night,
 Maker Omnipotent, and thou the Day. 729

Which we in our appointed work employ'd
 Have finish'd happy in our mutual help
 And mutual love, the Crown of all our bliss
 Obtain'd by thee, and this delicious place
 For us too large, where thy abundance wants 730
 Partakers, and uncropt falls to the ground.
 But thou hast promis'd from us two a Race
 To fill the Earth, who shall with us extol
 Thy goodness infinite, both when we wake,
 And when we seek, as now, thy gift of sleep. 734

This said unanimous, and other Rites
 Observing none, but adoration pure
 Which God likes best, into their inmost Bower
 Handed they went; and eas'd the putting off
 These troublesome disguises which we wear, 740
 Straight side by side were laid, nor turn'd I weene
 Adam from his fair Spouse, nor Eve the Rites
 Mysterious of connubial Love refus'd:

Whatever Hypocrites austere talk
 Of purity and place and innocence, 745
 Defaming as impure what God declares
 Pure, and commands to some, leaves free to all.
 Our Maker bids increase, who bids abstain
 But our destroyer, foe to God and Man?

Hail wedded Love, mysterious Law, true source
 Of human offspring, sole propriety,
 In Paradise of all things common else.
 By thee adulterous lust was driv'n from men
 Among the bestial herds to range, by thee
 Founded in Reason, Loyal, Just, and Pure,
 Relations dear, and all the Charities
 Of Father, Son, and Brother first were known.
 Far be it, that I should write thee sin or blame,
 Or think thee unbecom'g holiest place,
 Perpetual Fountain of Domestick sweets,
 Whose bed is undefil'd and chaste pronounc'd,
 Present, or past, as Saints or Patriarchs us'd.
 Here Love his golden shafts employs, here lights
 His constant Lamp, and waves his purple wings,
 Reigns here and revels; not in the bought smile
 Of Harlots, loveless, joyless, unindear'd, 76
 Casual fruition, nor in Court Amours
 Mixt Dance, or wanton Mask, or midnight Ball,
 Or Serenate, which the starv'd Lover sings
 To his proud fair, best quitted with disdain. 77
 These lull'd by Nightingales imbracing slept,
 And on their naked limbs the flow'ry roof
 Show'r'd Roses, which the Morn repair'd. Sleep on
 Elest pair; and O yet happiest if ye seek
 No happier state, and know to know no more. 775
 Now had night measur'd with her shaddowy Cone
 Half way up Hill this vast sublimar Vault,
 And from their Ivory Port the Cherubim
 Forth issuing at th'accustom'd hour stood arm'd

to their night watches in warlike Parade, 780
 When *Gabriel* to his next in power thus spake.

Uzziel, half these draw off, and coast the South
 With strictest watch; these other wheel the North,
 Our circuit meets full West. As flame they part
 Half wheeling to the Shield, half to the Spear. 785
 From these, two strong and subtle Spirits he call'd
 That near him stood, and gave them thus in charge.

Ithuriel and *Zephon*, with wing'd speed
 Search through this Garden, leave unsearcht no nook,
 But chiefly where those two fair Creatures lodge,
 Now laid perhaps asleep secure of harm. 791

This Evening from the Sun's decline arriv'd,
 Who tells of some infernal Spirit seen
 Hitherward bent (who could have thought?) escap'd
 The bars of Hell, on errand bad no doubt: 795
 Such where ye find, seize fast, and hither bring.

So saying, on he led his radiant Files,
 Dazling the Moon; these to the Bower direct
 In search of whom they sought: him there they found
 Squat like a Toad, close at the ear of *Eve*; 800
 Assaying by his devilish Art to reach
 The Organs of her Fancy, and with them forge
 Illusions as he list, Phantasms and Dreams,
 Or if, inspiring venom, he might taint
 Th' animal Spirits that from pure blood arise 805
 Like gentle breaths from Rivers pure, thence raise
 At last distemper'd, discontented thoughts,
 Vain hopes, vain aims, inordinate desires
 Blown up with high conceits ingendring pride.

Him thus intent *Ithuriel* with his Spear
 Touch'd lightly; for no falshood can endure
 Touch of Celestial temper, but returns
 Of force to its own likeness: up he starts
 Discover'd and surpriz'd. As when a spark
 Lights on a heap of nitrous Powder, laid
 Fit for the Tun some Magazine to store
 Against a rumor'd War, the smutty grain
 With sudden blaze diffus'd, inflames the Air:
 So started up in his own shape the Fiend.
 Back stept those two fair Angels half amaz'd
 So sudden to behold the griev'd King;
 Yet thus, unmov'd with fear, accost him soon.

Which of those rebel Spirits adjudg'd to Hell
 Com'st thou, escap'd thy prison, and transform'd,
 Why sat'st thou like an enemy in wait
 Here watching at the head of these that sleep?

Know ye not then, said *Satan*, fill'd with scorn,
 Know ye not me? ye knew me once no mate
 For you, there sitting where you durst not soare;
 Not to know me argues your selves unknown,
 The lowest of your throng; or if ye know,
 Why ask ye, and superfluous begin
 Your message, like to end as much in vain?
 To whom thus *Zephon*, answering scorn with scorn.
 Think not, revolted Spirit, thy shape the same,
 Or undiminish'd brightness to be known
 As when thou stood'st in Heav'n upright and pure;
 That Glory then, when thou no more wast good,
 Departed from thee, and thou resembl'st now.

My sin and place of doom obscure and foule. 840
But come, for thou, besure, shalt give account
To him who sent us, whose charge is to keep
This place inviolable, and these from harm.

So spake the Cherube, and his grave rebuke
Severe in youthful beauty, added grace 845
Invincible: abasht the Devil stood,

And felt how awful goodness is, and saw
Virtue in her shape how lovely, saw, and pin'd
His loss; but chiefly to find here observ'd
His lustre visibly impair'd; yet seem'd 850

Undaunted. If I must contend, said he,
Best with the best, the Sender not the sent,
Or all at once; more glory will be won,
Or less be lost. Thy fear, said Zephen bold;
Will save us trial what the least can do 855
Single against thee wicked, and thence weak.

The Fiend reply'd not, overcome with rage;
But like a proud Steed rein'd, went haughty on,
Chaumping his iron curb: to strive or flie
He held it vain; awe from above had quell'd 860
His heart, not else dismay'd. Now drew they nigh
The western Point, where those half-rounding guards
Just met, and closing stood in Squadron join'd
Awaiting next command. To whom their Chief
Gabriel from the Front thus call'd aloud. 865

O friends, I hear the tread of nimble feet
Hasting this way, and now by glimps discern
Ithuriel and Zephen through the shade,
And with them comes a third of Regal port,

But faded splendor wan; who by his gate
 And fierce demeanour seems the Prince of Hell,
 Not likely to part hence without contest;
 Stand firm, for in his look defiance lours.

He scarce had ended when these two approach'd
 And brief related whom they brought, where found,
 How busied, in what form and posture couch'd.

To whom with stern regard thus *Gabriel* spake.
 Why hast thou, *Satan*, broke the bounds prescrib'd
 To thy transgressions, and disturb'd the charge
 Of others, who approve not to transgress
 By thy example, but have power and right
 To question thy bold entrance on this place;
 Imploy'd it seems to violate sleep, and those
 Whose dwelling God hath planted here in bliss?

To whom thus *Satan*, with contemptuous brow.
Gabriel, thou hadst in Heav'n th'esteem of wise, 886
 And such I held thee; but this question askt
 Puts me in doubt. Lives there who loves his pain?
 Who would not, finding way, break loose from Hell,
 Tho' thither doom'd? Thou wouldst thy self, no doubt,
 And boldly venture to whatever place 891
 Farthest from pain, where thou mightst hope to change
 Torment with ease, and soonest recompence
 Dole with delight, which in this place I sought;
 To thee no reason; who knowst only good, 895
 But evil hast not try'd: and wilt object
 His will who bound us? let him surer bar
 His Iron Gates, if he intends our stay
 In that dark durance: thus much what was askt,

The rest is true; they found me where they say; 900
 But that implies not violence or harm.

Thus he in scorn. The warlike Angel mov'd,
 Disdainfully half smiling thus reply'd.

O loss of one in Heav'n to judge of wise,
 Since *Satan* fell, whom folly overthrew, 905

And now returns him from his prison scap'd,
 Gravely in doubt whether to hold them wise
 Or not, who ask what boldness brought him hither
 Unlicenc'd from his bounds in Hell prescrib'd;
 So wise he judges it to fly from pain. 910

However, and to scape his punishment.

So judge thou still, presumptuous, till the wrath,
 Which thou incur'st by flying, meet thy flight
 Sevenfold, and scourge that wisdom back to Hell,
 Which taught thee yet no better, that no pain
 Can equal anger infinite provok'd. 916

But wherefore thou alone? wherefore with thee
 Came not all Hell broke loose? is pain to them
 Less pain, less to be fled, or thou than they
 Less hardy to endure? courageous Chief, 920
 The first in flight from pain, hadst thou alledg'd
 To thy deserted host this cause of flight,
 Thou surely hadst not come sole fugitive.

To which the Fiend thus answer'd frowning stern.
 Not that I less endure, or shrink from pain, 925
 Insulting Angel, well thou knowst I stood
 Thy fiercest, when in Battel to thy aide
 Thy blasting vollied Thunder made all speed
 And seconded thy else not dreaded Spear.

But still thy words at random, as before,
 Argue thy inexperience what behooves
 From hard affaies and ill successes past,
 A faithful Leader, not to hazard all
 Through ways of danger by himself untry'd;
 I therefore, I alone first undertook
 To wing the desolate Abyss, and spie
 This new created World, whereof in Hell
 Fame is not silent, here in hope to find
 Better abode, and my afflicted Powers
 To settle here on Earth, or in mid Air;
 Though for possession put to try once more
 What thou and thy gay Legions dare against;
 Whose easier business were to serve their Lord
 High up in Heav'n, with Songs to hymn his Throne,
 And practis'd distances to cringe, not fight.

To whom the warrior Angel soon reply'd,
 To say and strait unsay, pretending first
 Wise to flie pain, professing next the Spy,
 Argues no Leader but a Liar trac'd,
 Satan, and couldst thou faithful add? O name,
 O sacred name of faithfulness profan'd!
 Faithful to whom? to thy rebellious crew?
 Army of Fiends, fit body to fit head;
 Was this your discipline and faith ingag'd,
 Your military obedience, to dissolve
 Allegiance to th'acknowledg'd Power supream?
 And thou sly hypocrite, who now wouldst seem
 Patron of liberty, who more than thou
 Once fawn'd, and cring'd, and servilly ador'd?

He's a wful Monarch? wherefore but in hope
to dispossess him; and thy self to reign? 961

but mark what I atreede thee now, avánt;
Flie thither whence thou fledst; if from this hour
Within these hallow'd limits thou appear,
Back to th'infernal pit I drag thee chain'd, 965
And Seal thee so, as henceforth not to scorn
The facil gates of hell too slightly barr'd.

So threaten'd he, but *Satan* to no threats
Gave heed, but waxing more in rage reply'd.
Then when I am thy captive talk of chaines,
Proud liminary Cherube, but e'er then 971
Far heavier load thy self expect to feel
From my prevailing arm, though Heavens King
Ride on thy wings, and thou with thy Compeers,
Us'd to the yolk, draw'st his triumphant wheels 975
In progress through the rode of Heav'n Star-pav'd.

While thus he spake, th'Angelic Squadron bright
Turn'd fiery red, sharpening in mooned horns
Their Phalanx, and began to hem him round
With ported Spears, as thick as when a field 980
Of *Ceres* ripe for harvest waving bends

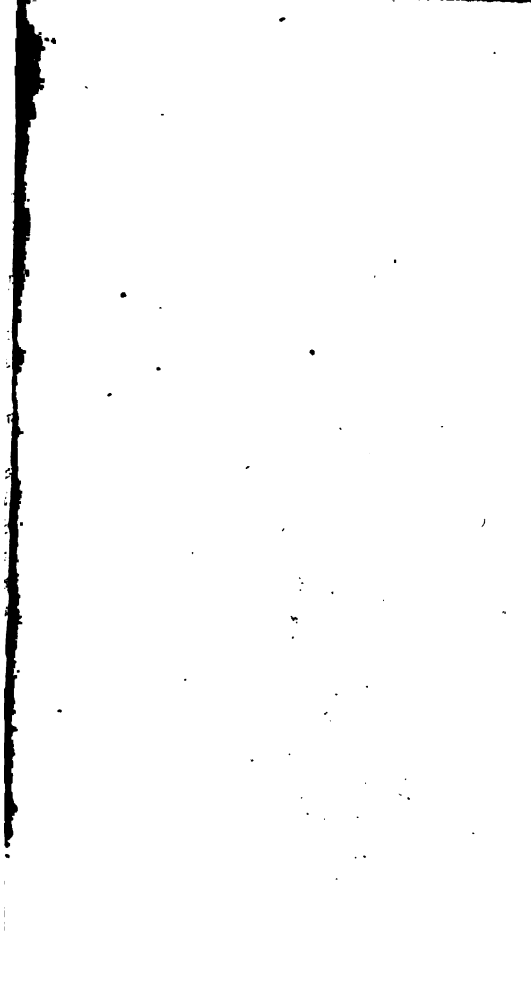
Her bearded Grove of ears, which way the wind
Sways them; the careful Plowman doubting stands,
Least on the threshing floore his hopeful sheaves
Prove chaff. On th'other side *Satan* alarm'd 985

Collecting all his might dilated stood,
Like *Tenerriff*, or *Atlas* unremov'd:.

His stature reach'd the Sky, and on his Crest
Sat horror Plum'd; nor wanted in his grasp.

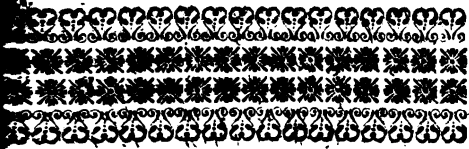
What seem'd both Spear and Shield: now dreadful den
 Might have ensu'd, not only Paradise
 In this commotion, but the Starry Cope
 Of Heav'n perhaps, or all the Elements
 At least had gone to rack, disturb'd and torn
 With violence of this conflict, had not soon
 Th' Eternal to prevent such horrid fray
 Hung forth in Heav'n his golden Scales, yet seen
 Betwixt *Astrea* and the *Scorpion* sign,
 Wherein all things created first he weigh'd,
 The pendulous round Earth with ballanc'd Air 1000
 In counterpoise, now ponders all events,
 Battels and Realms: in these he put two weights
 The sequel each of parting and of fight;
 The latter quick up flew, and kickt the beam;
 Which *Gabriel* spying, thus bespake the Fiend. 1005
Satan, I know thy strength, and thou knowst mine,
 Neither our own but giv'n; what folly then
 To boast what Arms can do, since thine no more
 Than Heav'n permits, nor mine, though doubl'd now
 To trample thee as mire: for proof look up, 1010
 And read thy Lot in yon celestial Sign
 Where thou art weigh'd, and shown how light, how
 If thou resist. The Fiend lookt up, and knew weak,
 His mounted scale aloft: nor more; but fled 1014
 Murmuring, and with him fled the shades of night,

The End of the Fourth Book,





LIBRARY OF THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO



Paradise Lost.

BOOK V.

The ARGUMENT.

Morning approach'd, Eve relates to Adam her troublesome dream; he likes it not, yet comforts her: They come forth to their day labours: Their Morning Hymn at the Door of their Bower. God to render Man inexcusable sends Raphael to admonish him of his obedience, of his free estate, of his enemy near at hand; who he is, and why his enemy, and whatever else may avail Adam to know. Raphael comes down to Paradise, his

appearance describ'd, his coming discern'd by Adam afar off, sitting near the door of his Bower; he goes out to meet him, brings him to his lodge, entertains him with the choicest fruits of Paradise got together by Eve; their discourse at Table: Raphael performs his message, minds Adam of his state and of his enemy; relates at Adam's request what that enemy is, and how he came to be so, beginning from his first revolt in Heaven, and the occasion thereof; how he drew his Legions after him to the parts of the North, and there incited them to rebel with him, perswading all but only Abdiel a Seraph, who in Argument dissuades and opposes him, then forsakes him.

NOW Morn her roſie ſteps in th' Eaſtern Clime
 Advancing, ſow'd the earth with Orient Pearl,
 When Adam wak'd, ſo cuſtom'd, for his ſleep
 Was Aene light from pure digeſtion bred,
 And temperat vapours bland, which th' only ſound
 Of leaves and ſuming rills, *Aurora's* fan, 6
 Lightly diſpers'd, and the ſhrill Marin Song
 Of Birds on every bough; ſo much the more
 His wonder was to find unwaken'd Eve
 With Trefles diſcompos'd, and glowing Cheek 10
 As through unquiet reſt: he on his ſide
 Leaning half rais'd, with looks of cordial Love
 Hung over her enamour'd, and beheld
 Beauty, which whether waking or aſleep,
 Shot forth peculiar Graces; then with voice 15
 Mild, as when *Zephyrus* on *Flora* breathes,
 Her hand ſoft touching, whiſper'd thus. Awake
 My faireſt, my eſpous'd, my lateſt found,
 Heav'n's laſt beſt gift, my ever new delight,
 Awake, the morning ſhines, and the freſh field 20
 Calls us, we loſe the prime, to mark how ſpring
 Our tended Plants, how blows the Cirron Grove,
 What drops the Myrrhe, and what the balmie Reed,
 How Nature paints her colour, how the Bee
 Sits on the Bloom extracting liquid ſweet. 25
 Such whiſpering wak'd her, but with ſtartl'd eye
 On Adam, whom embracing, thus ſhe ſpake.
 O Sole in whom my thoughts find all reſpoſe,
 My Glory, my Perfection, glad I ſee

Thy face, and Morn return'd, for I this Night,
 Such night till this I never pass'd, have dream'd,
 If dream'd, not as I oft am wont, of thee,
 Works of day pass'd, or morrows next design,
 But of offence and trouble, which my mind
 Knew never till this irksome night; methought
 Close at mine ear one call'd me forth to walk
 With gentle voice, I thought it thine; it said,
 Why sleepest thou *Eve*? now is the pleasant time,
 The cool, the silent, save where silence yields
 To the night-warbling Bird, that now awake
 Tunes sweetest his love-labour'd song; now reigns
 Full Orb'd the Moon, and with more pleasant light
 Shadowy sets off the face of things; in vain,
 If none regard; Heav'n wakes with all his Eyes,
 Whom to behold but thee, Natures desire,
 In whose sight all things joy, with ravishment
 Attracted by thy beauty still to gaze.
 I rose as at thy call, but found thee not;
 To find thee I directed then my walk;
 And on, methought, alone I pass'd thro' ways
 That brought me on a sudden to the Tree
 Of interdicted Knowledge: fair it seem'd,
 Much fairer to my Fancy than by day:
 And as I wondring lookt, beside it stood
 One shap'd and wing'd like one of those from Heav'n
 By us oft seen; his dewy locks distill'd
Ambrosia; on that Tree he also gaz'd;
 And O fair Plant, said he, with fruit surcharg'd,
 Deigns none to ease thy load and taste thy sweet,

Nor God, nor Man ; is Knowledge so despis'd? 60
 Or envy, or what reserve forbids to taste?
 Forbid who will, none shall from me with-hold
 Longer thy offer'd good; why else set here?
 This said he paus'd not, but with ventrous Arm
 He pluckt, he tasted; me damp horror chil'd 65
 At such bold words voucht with a deed so bold:
 But he thus overjoy'd, O Fruit Divine,
 Sweet of thy self, but much more sweet thus cropt,
 Forbidden here, it seems, as only fit
 For Gods, yet able to make Gods of Men : 70
 And why not Gods of Men, since good, the more
 Communicated, more abundant grows,
 The Author not impair'd, but honour'd more ?
 Here, happy Creature, fair Angelic *Eve*,
 Partake thou also; happy though thou art, 75
 Happier thou mayst be, worthier canst not be :
 Taste this, and be henceforth among the Gods
 Thy self a Goddess, not to Earth confin'd,
 But sometimes in the Air, as we, sometimes
 Ascend to Heav'n, by merit thine, and see 80
 What life the Gods live there, and such live thou,
 So saying, he drew nigh, and to me held,
 Even to my mouth of that same fruit held part
 Which he had pluckt; the pleasant savoury smell
 So quicken'd appetite, that I, methought, 85
 Could not but taste. Forthwith up to the Clouds
 With him I flew, and underneath beheld
 The Earth outstretcht immense, a prospect wide
 And various; wondering at my flight and change

To this high exaltation; suddenly
 My Guide was gone, and I, methought, sunk down
 And fell asleep; but O how glad I wak'd
 To find this but a dream! Thus Eve her Night
 Related, and thus *Adam* answer'd sad.

Best Image of my self and dearer half,
 The trouble of thy thoughts this night in sleep
 Affects me equally; nor can I like
 This uncouth dream, of evil sprung I fear;
 Yet evil whence? in thee can harbour none,
 Created pure. But know that in the Soul
 Are many lesser Faculties that serve
 Reason as chief; among these Fancy next
 Her office holds; of all external things,
 Which the five watchful Senses represent,
 She forms Imaginations, Aerie shapes,
 Which Reason joyning or disjoyning, frames
 All what we affirm or what deny, and call
 Our knowledge or opinion; then retires
 Into her private Cell, when Nature rests.
 Oft in her absence mimic Fancy wakes
 To imitate her; but misjoyning shapes,
 Wild work produces oft, and most in dreams,
 Ill matching words and deeds long past or late.
 Some such resemblances methinks I find
 Of our last Evening's talk, in this thy dream,
 But with addition strange; yet be not sad,
 Evil into the mind of God or Man
 May come and go, so unapprov'd, and leave
 No spot or blame behind: Which gives me hope.

what in sleep thou didst rather to dream, 120
 which thou never wilt consent to do.

Not discontented then, nor cloud those looks
 that worth to be more chearful and serene
 than when fair Morning first smiles on the World,
 but let us to our fresh Employments rise 125

Among the Groves, the Fountains, and the Flours,
 that open now their choicest bosom'd smells
 serv'd from night, and kept for thee in store.
 So chear'd he his fair Sponse, and she was chear'd,
 and silently a gentle tear let fall 130

from either eye, and wip'd them with her haire;
 two other precious drops that ready flood,
 which in their Chrystal sluice, he e'er they fell
 call'd as the gracious signs of sweet remorse
 and pious awe, that fear'd to have offended. 135

So all was clear'd, and to the Field they haste.
 But first from under shady arborous roof,
 Soon as they forth were come to open sight
 Of day-spring, and the Sun, who scarce up risen
 With wheels yet hovering o'er the Ocean brim, 140
 Shot parallel to the earth his dewy ray,

Discovering in wide Lantskip all the East
 Of Paradise and Eden's happy Plains,
 Lowly they bow'd adoring, and began
 Their Orisons, each Morning duly paid 145

In various style, for neither various style
 Nor holy rapture wanted they to praise
 Their Maker, in fit strains pronounc'd or sung
 Unmeditated, such prompt eloquence

Flow'd from their lips, in Prose or numerous Verse
 More tuneable than needed Lute or Harp
 To add more sweetness, and they thus began.

These are thy glorious works, Parent of good,
 Almighty, thine this universal Frame,
 Thus wondrous fair; thy self how wondrous then
 Unspeakable, who first above these Heavens
 To us invisible or dimly seen
 In these thy lowest works, yet these declare
 Thy goodness beyond thought, and Power Divine
 Speak ye who best can tell, ye Sons of light,
 Angels, for ye behold him, and with songs
 And choral symphonies, Day without Night,
 Circle his Throne rejoicing, ye in Heav'n,
 On Earth joyn all ye Creatures to extoll
 Him first, him last, him midst, and without end. 165
 Fairest of Stars, last in the train of Night,
 If better thou belong not to the dawn,
 Sure pledge of day that crownst the smiling Morn
 With thy bright Circlet, praise him in thy Sphere
 While day arises, that sweet hour of Prime. 170
 Thou Sun, of this great World both Eye and Soul,
 Acknowledge him thy Greater, sound his praise
 In thy eternal course, both when thou climbst,
 And when high Noon hast gain'd, and when thou fallst.
 Moon, that now meetst the orient Sun, now fly't 175
 With the fixt Stars, fixt in their Orb that flies,
 And ye five other wandring Fires that move
 In mystic Dance not without Song, resound
 His praise, who out of Darkness call'd up Light,

And ye Elements the eldest birth
 185
 Of Nature's Womb, that in quaternion run
 Perpetual Circle, multiform; and mix
 And nourish all things, let your ceaseless change
 Vary to our great Maker still new praise.
 Ye Mists and Exhalations that now rise 185
 From Hill or steaming Lake, dusky or grey,
 Till the Sun paint your fleecy skirts with Gold,
 In honour to the World's great Author rise,
 Whether to deck with Clouds the uncolour'd sky,
 Or wet the thirsty Earth with falling showers, 190
 Rising or falling still advance his praise.
 His praise ye Winds that from four Quarters blow,
 Breathe soft or loud; and wave your tops, ye Pines,
 With every Plant, in sign of Worship wave.
 Fountains and ye, that warble, as ye flow, 195
 Melodious murmurs, warbling tune his praise.
 Joyn voices all ye living Souls, ye Birds;
 That singing up to Heaven Gate ascend,
 Bear on your wings and in your notes his praise;
 Ye that in waters glide, and ye that walk 200
 The Earth, and stately tread, or lowly creep;
 Witness if I be silent, Morn or Eeven,
 To Hill, or Valley, Fountain, or fresh shade
 Made vocal by my Song, and taught his praise.
 Hail universal Lord, be bounteous still 205
 To give us only good; and if the night
 Have gathered aught of evil or conceal'd,
 Disperse it, as now light dispels the dark.
 So pray'd they innocent, and to their thoughts

Firm peace recover'd soon and wonned calm;
 On to their morning's rural work they haste
 Among sweet dewes and flours; where any row
 Of Fruit-trees over woodie reach'd too far
 Their pamper'd boughes, and needed hands to shew
 Fruitless imbraces: or they led the Vine
 To wed her Elm; she spous'd about him twined
 Her marriageable arms, and with her brings
 Her down th'adopted Clusters, to adorn
 His barren leaves. Them thus imploy'd beheld
 With pity Heav'n's high King, and to him call'd
Raphael, the sociable Spirit, that deign'd
 To travel with *Tobias*, and secur'd
 His marriage with the seventimes-wedded Maid.

Raphael, said he, thou hear'st what stir on Earth
Satan from Hell scap'd through the darksome Gate
 Hath rais'd in Paradise, and how disturb'd
 This night the human pair, how he designs
 In them at once to ruin all mankind.
 Go therefore, half this day as friend with friend
 Converse with *Adam*, in what Bower or shade
 Thou find'st him from the heat of Noon retir'd,
 To respite his day-labour with repast,
 Or with repose; and such discourse bring on,
 As may advise him of his happy state,
 Happiness in his power left free to will,
 Left to his own free Will, his Will though free,
 Yet mutable; whence warn him to beware
 He swerve not too secure: tell him withal
 His danger, and from whom, what enemy

He fall'n himself from Heav'n, is plotting now
The fall of others from like state of bliss; 241

By violence, no, for that shall be withstood,
But by deceit and lies; this let him know,
Ere he wilfully transgressing he pretend
Surprise, unadmonish'd, unforewarn'd. 245

So spake th' Eternal Father, and fulfill'd
All justice: nor delay'd the winged Saint
After his charge receiv'd; but from among
Thousand Celestial Ardors, where he stood

Waiv'd with his gorgeous wings, up springing light 250

Drew through the midst of Heav'n; th' angelic Quires

On each hand parting, to his speed gave way

Through all th' Empyrean road; till at the Gate

Of Heav'n arriv'd, the gate self-open'd wide

On golden Hinges turning, as by work 255

Divine the sov'reign Architect had fram'd.

From hence, no cloud, or, to obstruct his sight,

Star interpos'd, however small he sees,

Not unconform to other shining Globes,

Earth and the Gard'n of God, with Cedar crown'd

Above all Hills. As when by night the Glass 261

Of *Galileo*, less assur'd, observes

Imagin'd Lands and Regions in the Moon:

Or Pilot from amidst the *Cyclades*

Delos; or *Samos* first appearing kenns 265

A cloudy spot. Down thither prone in flight

He speeds, and through the vast Ethereal Sky

Sailes between worlds and worlds, with steady wing

Now on the polar windes, then with quick Fan

Winnows the buxom Air; till within soare
 Of Towing Eagles, to all the Fowles he seem'd
 A *Phenix*, gaz'd by all, as that sole Bird
 When to enshrine his reliques in the Sun's
 Bright Temple, to *Egyptian Theb's* he flies.
 At once on th'Easter cliff of Paradise
 He lights, and to his proper shape returns
 A Seraph wing'd; six wings he wore, to shade
 His lineaments Divine; the pair that clad
 Each shoulder broad, came mantling o'er his breast
 With regal Ornament; the middle pair
 Girt like a Starry Zone his waste, and round
 Skirted his loines and thighs with downy Gold
 And colours dipt in Heav'n; the third his feet
 Shadow'd from either heele with feather'd mail
 Sky-tinctur'd grain. Like *Maia's* son he stood, 285
 And shook his Plumes, that Heav'nly fragrance fill'd
 The circuit wide. Strait knew him all the Bands
 Of Angels under watch; and to his state,
 And to his message high in honour rise; 290
 For on some message high they guess'd him bound.
 Their glittering Tents he pass'd, and now is come
 Into the blisful field, through Groves of Myrre,
 And flouing Odours, Cassia, Nard, and Balme;
 A Wilderness of sweets; for Nature here
 Wanton'd as in her prime, and plaid at will 295
 Her Virgin Fancies, pouring forth more sweet,
 Wild above Rule or Art; enormous bliss.
 Him through the spicie Forrest onward come
Adam discern'd, as in the door he sat

Of his cool Bower, while now the mounted Sun
 Not down direct his fervid Raies to warme 301
 Earth's inmost womb, more warmth than *Adam* needs;
 And *Eve* within, due to her hour prepar'd
 For dinner savoury fruits, of taste to please
 True appetite, and not disrelish thirst 305
 Of nectarous draughts between, from milky stream,
 Berry or Grape: to whom thus *Adam* call'd.

Haste hither *Eve*, and worth thy sight behold
 Eastward among those Trees, what glorious shape
 Comes this way moving; seems another Morn 310
 Ris'n on mid-noon; some great behest from Heav'n
 To us perhaps he brings, and will vouchsafe
 This Day to be our Guest. But go with speed,
 And what thy stores contain, bring forth and pour
 Abundance, fit to honour and receive 315

Our Heav'nly stranger; well we may afford
 Our givers their own gifts, and large bestow
 From large bestow'd, where Nature multiplies
 Her fertil growth, and by disburd'ning grows
 More fruitful, which instructs us not to spare. 320

To whom thus *Eve*. *Adam*, earth's hallow'd mould,
 Of God inspir'd, small store will serve, where store,
 All seasons, ripe for use hangs on the stalk;
 Save what by frugal storing firmness gains
 To nourish, and superfluous moist consumes : 325
 But I will haste and from each bough and break,
 Each Plant and juciest Gourd will pluck such choice
 To entertain our Angel guest, as he
 Beholding shall confess that here on Earth

God hath dispens't his bounties as in Heav'n.

So saying, with dispatchful looks in haste
 She turns, on hospitable thoughts intent
 What choice to chuse for delicacy best,
 What order, so contriv'd as not to mix
 Tastes, not well joyn'd, inelegant, but bring
 Taste after taste upheld with kindest change,
 Bestirs her then, and from each tender stalk
 Whatever Earth all-bearing Mother yields
 In *India* East or West, or middle shore
 In *Pontus* or the *Punic* Coast, or where
Alcinous reign'd, fruit of all kinds, in coate,
 Rough, or smoooth rin'd, or bearded husk, or shell
 She gathers, Tribute large, and on the board
 Heaps with unsparing hand; for drink the Grape
 She crushes, inoffensive moult, and meathes
 From many a berry, and from sweet kernels prest
 She tempers dulcet creams, nor these to hold
 Wants her fit vessels pure, then strews the ground
 With Rose and Odours from the shrub unfum'd.
 Mean while our Primitive great Sire, to meet
 His god-like Guest, walks forth, without more train
 Accompany'd than with his own compleat
 Perfections, in himself was all his state,
 More solemn than the tedious pomp that waits
 On Princes, when their rich retinue long
 Of Horses led, and Grooms besmear'd with Gold
 Dazles the croud, and sets them all agape.
 Nearer his presence *Adam* though not aw'd,
 Yet with submissive approach and reverence meek,

to a Superior Nature, bowing low, 360
 Thus said. Native of Heav'n, for other place
 None can than Heav'n such glorious shape contain:
 Since by descending from the Thrones above,
 Those happy places thou hast deign'd a while
 To want, and honour these, vouchsafe with us 365
 Two only, who yet by sov'reign gift possess
 This spacious ground, in yonder shady Bower
 To rest, and what the Garden choicest bears
 To sit and taste, till this meridian heat
 Be over, and the Sun more coole decline. 370

Whom thus the Angelic Virtue answer'd mild.
Adam, I therefore came, nor art thou such
 Created, or such place hast here to dwell,
 As may not oft invite, though Spirits of Heav'n,
 To visit thee; lead on then where thy Bower 375
 O'er shades; for these mid-hours, till Eevening rise
 I have at will. So to the Silvan Lodge
 They came, that like *Pomona's* Arbour smil'd
 With flourets deckt and fragrant smells; but *Eve*
 Undeckt, save with her self more lovely fair 380
 Than Wood-Nymph, or the fairest Goddess feign'd
 Of three that in Mount *Ida* naked strove,
 Stood to entertain her guest from Heav'n; no vaile
 She needed, Virtue proof, no thought infirm
 Alter'd her cheek. On whom the Angel *Haile* 385
 Bestow'd, the holy salutation us'd
 Long after to blest *Mary*, second *Eve*.

Haile Mother of Mankind, whose fruitful Womb
 shall fill the World more numerous with thy Sons

Than with these various fruits the Trees of God
 Have heap'd this Table. Rais'd of grassie turf
 Their Table was, and mossie seats had round,
 And on her ample Square from side to side
 All *Autumn* pil'd, though *Spring* and *Autumn*
 Danc'd hand in hand. A while discourse they held
 No fear lest Dinner coole; when thus began
 Our Author. Heav'nly stranger, please to taste
 These bounties which our Nourisher, from whom
 All perfect good unmeasur'd out, descends,
 To us for food and for delight hath caus'd
 The Earth to yield; unfavoury food perhaps
 To spiritual Natures; only this I know,
 That one Celestial Father gives to all.

To whom the Angel. Therefore what he gives
 (Whose praise be ever sung) to man in part
 Spiritual, may of purest Spirits be found
 No ingrateful food: and food alike those pure
 Intelligential substances require
 As doth your Rational; and both contain
 Within them every lower faculty
 Of sense, whereby they hear, see, smell, touch, taste
 Tasting concoct, digest, assimilate;
 And corporeal to incorporeal turn.
 For know, whatever was created, needs
 To be sustain'd and fed; of Elements
 The grosser feeds the purer, Earth the Sea,
 Earth and the Sea feed Air, the Air those Fires
 Ethereal, and as lowest first the Moon;
 Whence in her visage round those spots, unpurg'd

vapours not yet into her substance turn'd. 420
 Nor doth the Moon no nourishment exhale
 From her moist Continent to higher Orbes.
 The Sun that light imparts to all, receives
 From all his aimental recompence
 In humid Exhalations, and at Ev'n 425
 Sips with the Ocean: though in Heav'n the Trees
 Of life ambrosial frutage bear, and vines
 Yield Nectar, though from off the boughs each Morn
 We brush mellifluous Dewes, and find the ground
 Cover'd with pearly grain: yet God hath here 430
 Varied his bounty so with new delights,
 As may compare with Heaven; and to taste
 Think not I shall be nice. So, down they sat,
 And to their viands fell, nor seemingly
 The Angel, nor in mist, the common gloss 435
 Of Theologians, but with keen dispatch
 Of real hunger, and concoctive heat
 To transubstantiate; what redounds, transpires
 Through Spirits with ease; nor wonder; if by fire
 Of footy coal the Empiric Alchymist 440
 Can turn, or holds it possible to turn
 Metals of drossiest Ore to perfect Gold
 As from the Mine. Mean while at Table Eve
 Minister'd naked, and their flowing cups
 With pleasant liquors crown'd: O innocence 445
 Deserving Paradise! if ever, then,
 Then had the Sons of God excuse to have been
 Enamour'd at that sight; but in those hearts
 Love unlibidinous reign'd, nor jealousie

Was understood, the injur'd Lovers Hell.

Thus when with meats and drinks they had suffic
Nor burden'd Nature, sudden mind arose

In *Adam*, not to let th' occasion pass

Giv'n him by this great conference to know

Of things above his World, and of their being

Who dwell in Heav'n, whose excellence he saw

Transcend his own so far, whose radiant forms

Divine effulgence, whose high Power so far

Exceeded human, and his wary speech

Thus to th' Empyrean Minister he fram'd.

Inhabitant with God, now know I well

Thy favour, in this honour done to man,

Under whose lowly roof thou hast vouchsaf'd

To enter, and these earthly fruits to taste,

Food not of Angels, yet accepted so,

As that more willingly thou couldst not seem

At Heav'n's high feasts to have fed : yet what compa

To whom the winged Hierarch reply'd.

O *Adam*, one Almighty is, from whom

All things proceed, and up to him return,

If not deprav'd from good, created all

Such to perfection, one first matter all,

Indu'd with various forms, various degrees

Of substance, and in things that live, of life;

But more refin'd, more spiritous, and pure,

As nearer to him plac'd or nearer tending

Each in their several active Spheres assign'd,

Till body up to spirit work, in bounds

Proportion'd to each kind. So from the root

things lighter the green stalk, from thence the leaves
 are aerie, last the bright consummate flour 481
 spirits odorous breathes: flours and their fruit
 man's nourishment, by gradual scale sublim'd
 to vital Spirits aspire, to animal,
 to intellectual, give both life and sense, 485
 fancy and understanding, whence the Soul
 reason receives, and reason is her being,
 discursive, or Intuitive; discourse
 softest yours, the latter most is ours,
 differing but in degree, of kind the same. 490
 Wonder not then, what God for you saw good
 I refuse not, but convert, as you,
 to proper substance; time may come when men
 with Angels may participate, and find
 no inconvenient Diet, nor too light Fare: 495
 and from these corporal nutriments perhaps
 our bodies may at last turn all to Spirit,
 improv'd by tract of time, and wing'd ascend
 thereal, as we, or may at choice
 here or in Heav'nly Paradises dwell; 500
 if ye be found obedient, and retain
 unalterably firm his love entire
 Whose progeny you are. Mean while enjoy
 your fill what happiness this happy state
 can comprehend, incapable of more. 505

To whom the Patriarch of mankind reply'd,
 O favourable spirit, propitious guest,
 Well hast thou taught the way that might direct
 Our knowledge, and the scale of Nature set.

From center to circumference, whereon
 In contemplation of created things
 By steps we may ascend to God. But say,
 What meant that caution join'd, *if ye be found*
Obedient? can we want obedience then
 To him, or possibly his love desert
 Who form'd us from the dust, and plac'd us here:
 Full to the utmost measure of what bliss
 Human desires can seek or apprehend?

To whom the Angel. Son of Heav'n and Earth,
 Attend: That thou art happy, owe to God;
 That thou continu'st such, owe to thy self,
 That is, to thy obedience; therein stand.
 This was that caution giv'n thee; be advis'd.
 God made thee perfect, not immutable;
 And good he made thee, but to persevere
 He left it in thy power, ordain'd thy will
 By nature free, not over rul'd by Fate
 Inextricable, or strict necessity;
 Our voluntary service he requires,
 Not our necessitated, such with him
 Finds no acceptance, nor can find, for how
 Can hearts, not free, be try'd whether they serve
 Willing or no, who will but what they must
 By Destiny, and can no other chuse?
 My self and all th' Angelic Host that stand
 In sight of God enthron'd, our happy state
 Hold, as you yours, while our obedience holds;
 On other surety none; freely we serve,
 Because we freely love, as in our will

Love or not; in this we stand or fall: 540
 And some are fall'n, to disobedience fall'n,
 And so from Heav'n to deepest Hell; O fall
 From what high state of blifs into what woe!

To whom our great Progenitor. Thy words
 Attentive, and with more delighted ear, 545
 Divine instructor, I have heard, than when
 Cherubic Songs by night from neighbouring Hills
 Aereal Musick send: nor knew I not
 To be both will and deed created free;
 Yet that we never shall forget to love 550
 Our maker, and obey him whose command
 Single, is yet so just, my constant thoughts
 Assur'd me, and still assure: though what thou tell'st
 Hath past in Heav'n, some doubt within me move,
 But more desire to hear, if thou consent, 555
 The full relation, which must needs be strange,
 Worthy of Sacred silence to be heard;
 And we have yet large day, for scarce the Sun
 Hath finish'd half his journey, and scarce begins
 His other half to the great Zone of Heav'n. 560

Thus *Adam* made request, and *Raphael*
 After short pause assenting, thus began.
 High matter thou enjoinst me, O prime of men,
 Sad task and hard, for how shall I relate
 To human sense th'invisible exploits 565
 Of warring Spirits; how without remorse
 The ruin of so many glorious once
 And perfect while they stood; how last unfold
 The secrets of another world, perhaps

Not lawful to reveal? yet for thy good
 This is dispenc'd, and what surmounts the reach
 Of human sense, I shall delineate so,
 By lik'ning spiritual to corporeal forms,
 As may express them best, though what if Earth
 Be but the shadow of Heav'n, and things therein
 Each to other like, more than on earth is thought

As yet this world was not, and *Chaos* wild
 Reign'd where these Heav'ns now rowl, where Earth
 Upon her Center pois'd, when on a day [now rest
 (For time, though in Eternity, apply'd
 To motion, measures all things durable
 By present, past, and future) on such day
 As Heav'ns great Year brings forth, th'Empyrean Host
 Of Angels by Imperial summons call'd,
 Innumerable before th'Almighties Throne
 Forthwith from all the ends of Heav'n appear'd
 Under their Hierarchs in orders bright
 Ten thousand thousand Ensigns high advanc'd,
 Standards, and Gonfalons 'twixt Van and Rear
 Stream in the Air, and for distinction serve
 Of Hierarchies, of Orders, and Degrees;
 Or in their glittering Tissues bear imblaz'd
 Holy Memorials, acts of Zeal and Love
 Recorded eminent. Thus when in Orbs
 Of circuit inexpressible they stood,
 Orb within Orb, the Father infinite,
 By him in bliss imbosom'd sat the Son
 Amidst as from the flaming Mount, whose top
 Brightness had made invisible, thus spake.

Hear all ye Angels, Progeny of Light, 600
Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Virtues, Powers,
Hear my Decree, which unrevok'd shall stand.

This day I have begot whom I declare

My only Son, and on this holy Hill

Him have anointed, whom ye now behold 605

At my right hand; our Head I him appoint;

And by my Self have sworn to him shall bow

All knees in Heav'n, and shall confess him Lord:

Under his great Vice-gerent Reign abide

United as one individual Soul 610

For ever happy: him who disobey's

Me disobey's, breaks union, and that day

Cast out from God and blessed vision, falls

Into utter darkness, deep ingulf'd, his place

Ordain'd without redemption, without end. 615

So spake th' Omnipotent, and with his words

All seem'd well pleas'd, all seem'd, but were not all.

That day, as other solemn days, they spent

In song and dance about the sacred Hill.

Mystical dance, which yonder starry Spheare 620

Of Planets and of fixt in all her Wheels

Resembles nearest, mazes intricate,

Eccentric, intervolv'd, yet regular

Then most, when most irregular they seem,

And in their motions harmony Divine 625

So smooths her charming tones, that Gods own ear

Liftens delighted. Evening now approach'd

(For we have also our Evening and our Morn,

We ours for change delectable, not need).

Forthwith from dance to sweet repast they turn
 Desirous; all in Circles as they stood,
 Tables are set, and on a sudden pil'd
 With Angels Food, and rubied Nectar flows
 In Pearl, in Diamond, and massie Gold,
 Fruit of delicious Vines, the growth of Heav'n.
 On flours repos'd, and with fresh flourets crown'd,
 They eat, they drink, and in communion sweet
 Quaff immortality and joy, secure
 Of surfeit where full measure only bounds
 Excess, before th' all bounteous King, who shew'd
 With copious hand, rejoycing in their joy.
 Now when ambrosial Night with Clouds exhal'd
 From that high mount of God, whence light and shade
 Spring both, the face of brightest Heav'n had chang'd
 To grateful Twilight (for Night comes not there
 In darker veil) and roseat Dews dispos'd
 All but the unsleeping eyes of God to rest,
 Wide over all the Plain, and wider far
 Than all this globous Earth in Plain out spred,
 (Such are the Courts of God) Th' Angelic throng
 Dispers'd in Bands and Files their Camp extend
 By living Streams among the Trees of Life,
 Pavilions numberless, and sudden rear'd,
 Celestial Tabernacles, where they slept
 Fann'd with coole Winds, save those who in their
 Melodious Hymns about the sov'reign Throne
 Alternate all night long: but not so wak'd
 Satan, so call him now, his former name
 Is heard no more in Heav'n; he of the first,

[course]

If not the first Arch-Angel, great in Power, 660
 In favour and præminence, yet fraught
 With envy against the Son of God, that day
 Honour'd by his great Father, and proclaim'd
Messiah King anointed, could not bear 664
 Thro' pride that sight, and thought himself impair'd,
 Deep malice thence conceiving and disdain,
 Soon as midnight brought on the dusky hour
 Friendliest to sleep and silence, he resolv'd
 With all his Legions to dislodge, and leave
 Unworshipt, unbey'd the Throne supream 670
 Contemptuous, and his next subordinate
 Awak'ning, thus to him in secret spake.

Sleepest thou, Companion dear, what sleep can close
 Thy eye-lids? and remembrest what Decree
 Of yesterday, so late hath past the lips 675
 Of Heav'n's Almighty. Thou to me thy thoughts
 Wast wont, I mine to thee was wont to impart;
 Both waking we were one; how then can now
 Thy sleep dissent? new Laws thou seest impos'd;
 New Laws from him who reigns, new minds may raise
 In us who serve, new Counsels, to debate 681
 What doubtful may ensue, more in this place
 To utter is not safe. Assemble thou
 Of all those Myriads which we lead the chief;
 Tell them that by command, e'er yet dim Night
 Her shadowy Cloud withdraws, I am to haste, 686
 And all who under me their Banners wave,
 Homeward with flying march where we possess
 The Quarters of the North, there to prepare

Fit entertainment to receive our King
 The great *Messiah*, and his new commands,
 Who speedily through all the Hierarchies
 Intends to pass triumphant, and give Laws.

So spake the false Arch-Angel, and infus'd
 Bad influence into th' unwary breast
 Of his Associate; he together calls,
 Or several one by one, the Regent Powers,
 Under him Regent, tells, as he was taught,
 That the most High commanding, now e'er Night,
 Now e'er dim Night had disincumber'd Heav'n, 703
 The great Hierarchal Standard was to move;
 Tells the suggested cause, and casts between
 Ambiguous words and jealousies, to found
 Or taint integrity; but all obey'd
 The wonted signal, and superior voice 705
 Of their great Potentate; for great indeed
 His name, and high was his degree in Heav'n;
 His count'nance, as the Morning Star that guides
 The starry flock, allur'd them, and with lies
 Drew after him the third part of Heav'n's Host: 710
 Mean while th' Eternal eye, whose sight discerns
 Abstrusest thoughts, from forth his holy Mount
 And from within the golden Lamps that burn
 Nightly before him, saw without their Light
 Rebellion rising, saw in whom, how spread 715
 Among the sons of Morn, what multitudes
 Were banded to oppose his high Decree;
 And smiling to his only Son thus said.

Son, thou in whom my glory I behold

In full resplendence, Heir of all my might, 720
 Nearly it now concerns us to be sure
 Of our Omnipotence, and with what Arms
 We mean to hold what anciently we claim
 Of Deity or Empire, such a foe
 Is rising, who intends to erect his Throne 725
 Equal to ours, throughout the spacious North;
 Nor so content, hath in his thought to try
 In battel, what our Power is, or our right.
 Let us advise, and to this hazard draw
 With speed what force is left, and all employ 730
 In our defence, lest unawares we lose
 This our high place, our Sanctuary, our Hill.

To whom the Son with calm aspect and clear
 Light'ning Divine, ineffable, serene,
 Made answer. Mighty Father, thou thy foes 735
 Justly hast in derision, and secure
 Laughst at their vain designs, and tumults vain,
 Matter to me of Glory, whom their hate
 Illustrates, when they see all Regal Power
 Giv'n me to quell their pride, and in event 740
 Know whether I be dextrous to subdue
 Thy Rebels, or be found the worst in Heav'n.

So spake the Son, but *Satan* with his Powers
 Far was advanc'd on winged speed, an Host
 Innumerable as the Stars of Night, 745
 Or Stars of Morning, Dew-drops, which the Sun
 Impearls on every leaf and every flour.
 Regions they pass'd, and mighty Regencies
 Of Seraphim and Potentates and Thrones.

In their triple Degrees, Regions to which 750
 All thy Dominion, *Adam*, is no more
 Than what this Garden is to all the Earth,
 And all the Sea, from one entire globe
 Stretcht into Longitude; which having pass'd
 At length into the limits of the North 755
 They came, and *Satan* to his Royal seat
 High on a Hill, far blazing, as a Mount
 Rais'd on a Mount, with Pyramids and Towers
 From Diamond Quarries hew'n, and Rocks of Gold,
 The Palace of great *Lucifer*, (so call 760
 That Structure in the Dialect of men
 Interpret'd) which not long after, he
 Affecting all equality with God,
 In imitation of that Mount whereon
Messiah was declar'd in sight of Heav'n, 765
 The Mountain of the Congregation call'd;
 For thither he assembl'd all his Train,
 Pretending so commanded to consult
 About the great reception of their King,
 Thither to come, and with calumnious Art 770
 Of counterfeited truth thus held their ears.

Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Virtues, Powers,
 If these magnificent Titles yet remain
 Not meerly titular, since by Decree
 Another now hath to himself ingross'd 775
 All Power, and us eclips'd under the name
 Of King anointed, for whom all this haste
 Of midnight march, and hurry'd meeting here,
 This only to consult, how we may best

With what may be devis'd of honours new 780
 Receive him coming to receive from us
 Knee-tribute yet unpaid, prostration vile,
 Too much to one, but double how endur'd,
 To one and to his image now proclaim'd?
 But what if better counsels might erect 785
 Our minds, and teach us to cast off this Yoke?
 Will ye submit your necks, and chuse to bend
 The supple knee? ye will not, if I trust
 To know ye right, or if ye know your selves
 Natives and Sons of Heav'n possess before 790
 By none, and if not equal all, yet free,
 Equally free; for Orders and Degrees
 Jar not with liberty, but well consist.
 Who can in reason then or right assume
 Monarchy over such as live by right 795
 His equals, if in power and splendor less,
 In freedom equal; or can introduce
 Law and Edict on us, who without law
 Err not, much less for this to be our Lord,
 And look for adoration to th' abuse 800
 Of those Imperial Titles which assert
 Our being ordain'd to govern, not to serve?

Thus far this bold discourse without controul
 Had audience, when among the Seraphim
Abdiel, than whom none with more zeal ador'd
 The Deity, and divine commands obey'd, 805
 Stood up, - and in a flame of zeal severe
 The current of his fury thus oppos'd.

○ argument blasphemous, false and proud!

Words which no ear ever to hear in Heav'n 810
 Expected, least of all from thee, ingrate
 In place thy self so high above thy Peers.
 Canst thou with impious Obloquy condemn
 The just Decree of God, pronounc'd and sworn,
 That to his only Son by right endu'd 815
 With regal Scepter, every Soul in Heav'n
 Shall bend the knee, and in that honour due
 Confess him rightful King? unjust thou saist
 Flatly unjust, to bind with Laws the free,
 And equal over equals to let Reign, 820
 One over all with unsucceeded power.
 Shalt thou give Law to God, shalt thou dispute
 With him the points of liberty, who made
 Thee what thou art, and form'd the Pow'rs of Heav'n
 Such as he pleas'd, and circumscrib'd their being? 825
 Yet by experience taught we know how good,
 And of our good, and of our dignity
 How provident he is, how far from thought
 To make us less, bent rather to exalt
 Our happy state under one Head more near 830
 United. But to grant it thee unjust,
 That equal over equals Monarch Reign :
 Thy self though great and glorious dost thou count,
 Or all Angelic Nature join'd in one,
 Equal to him begotten Son, by whom 835
 As by his Word the mighty Father made
 All things, ev'n thee, and all the Spirits of Heav'n
 By him created in their bright degrees,
 Crown'd them with Glory, and to their Glory nam'd.

Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Virtues, Powers,
 Essential Powers, nor by his Reign obscur'd, 841
 But more illustrious made, since he the Head
 One of our number thus reduc'd becomes,
 His Laws our Laws, all honour to him done
 Returns our own. Cease then this impious rage 845
 And tempt not these; but hast'n to appease
 Th' incens'd Father, and th' incens'd Son,
 While Pardon may be found in time besought.

So spake the fervent Angel, but his zeal
 None seconded, as out of season judg'd, 850
 Or singular and rash, whereat rejoic'd
 Th' Apostat, and more haughty thus reply'd.
 That we were form'd then saist thou? and the work
 Of secondary hands, by task transferr'd
 From Father to his Son? strange point and new? 855
 Doctrine which we would know whence learnt: who
 When this creation was? rememberst thou [saw
 Thy making, while the Maker gave thee being?
 We know no time when we were not as now;
 Know none before us, self-begot, self-rais'd 860
 By our own quick'ning power, when fatal course
 Had circl'd his full Orb, the birth mature
 Of this our native Heav'n, Ethereal Sons.
 Our puissance is our own, our own right hand
 Shall teach us highest deeds, by proof to try 865
 Who is our equal: then thou shalt behold
 Whether by supplication we intend
 Address, and to begirt th' Almighty Throne
 Beseeching or besieging. This report,

These tidings carry to th' anointed King ; 870
And fly, e'er evil intercept thy flight.

He said, and as the sound of waters deep
Hoarse murmur echo'd to his words applause
Through the infinite Host, nor less for that
The flaming Seraph fearless, though alone 875
Encompass'd round with foes, thus answer'd bold.

O alienate from God, O Spirit accurst,
Forsak'n of all good; I see thy fall
Determin'd, and thy hapless crew involv'd
In this perfidious fraud, contagion spread 880
Both of thy crime and punishment: henceforth
No more be troubl'd how to quit the yoke
Of God's *Messiah*; those indulgent Laws
Will not be now vouchsaf'd, other Decrees
Against thee are gone forth without recal; 885
That Golden Scepter which thou didst reject
Is now an Iron Rod to bruise and break
Thy disobedience. Well thou didst advise,
Yet not for thy advice or threats I fly
These wicked Tents devoted, least the wrath 890
Impendent, raging into sudden flame
Distinguish not: for soon expect to feel
His Thunder on thy head, devouring fire,
Then who created thee lamenting learn,
When who can uncreate thee thou shalt know. 895

So spake the Seraph *Abdiel* faithful found,
Among the faithless, faithful only he;
Among innumerable false, unmov'd,
Unshak'n, unseduc'd, untterrify'd.

His Loyalty he kept, his Love, his Zeal; 900
Nor number, nor example with him wrought
To swerve from truth, or change his constant mind
Though single. From amidst them forth he pass'd,
Long way through scorn, which he sustain'd
Superior, nor of violence fear'd ought; 905
And with retorted scorn his back he turn'd
On those proud Towers to swift destruction doom'd.

The End of the Fifth Book.



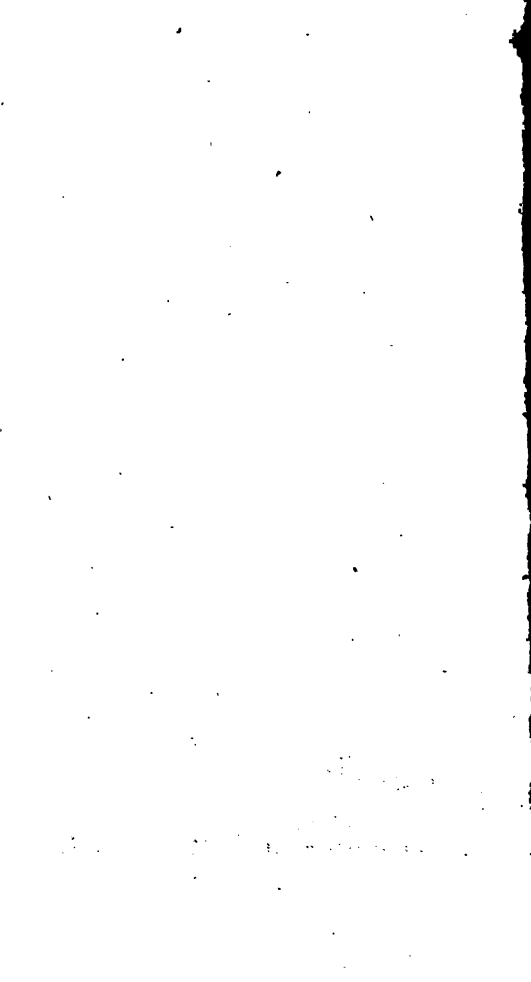
Paradise Lost.

BOOK VI.

The ARGUMENT.

Raphael continues to relate how Michael and Gabriel were sent forth to battle against Satan and his Angels. The first Fight describ'd: Satan and his Powers retire under Night: He calls a Council, invents devilish Engines, which in the second days Fight put Michael and his Angels to some disorder; but they at length pulling up Mountains overwhelm'd both the force





and Machins of Satan : Yet the Tumult not so ending, God on the third day sends Messiah his Son, for whom he had reserv'd the glory of that Victory : He in the Power of his Father coming to the place, and causing all his Legions to stand still on either side, with his Chariot and Thunder driving into the midst of his Enemies, pursues them unable to resist towards the wall of Heaven ; which opening, they leap down with horror and confusion into the place of punishment prepar'd for them in the Deep : Messiah returns with triumph to his Father.

ALL night the dreadful Angel unpursu'd
 Thro' Heav'n's wide Champain held his way, till
 Wak'd by the circling Hours, with roſie hand [Morn
 Unbarr'd the gates of Light. There is a Cave
 Within the Mount of God, faſt by the Throne,
 Where light and darkneſs in perpetual round
 Lodge and diſlodge by turns, which makes thro' Heav'n
 Grateful viciffitude, like Day and Night;
 Light iſſues forth, and at the other door
 Obſequious darkneſs enters, till her hour
 To veile the Heav'n, tho' darkneſs there might well
 Seem twilight here; and now went forth the Morn
 Such as in higheſt Heav'n, array'd in Gold
 Empyrean, from before her vanquiſht Night,
 Shot thro' with orient Beams, when all the Plain
 Cover'd with thick embattel'd Squadrons bright,
 Chariots and flaming Arms, and fiery Steeds
 Reflecting blaze on blaze, firſt meet his view:
 War he perceiv'd, war in prociſt, and found
 Already known what he for news had thought
 To have reported: gladly then he mixt
 Among thoſe friendly Powers who him receiv'd
 With joy and acclamations loud, that one
 That of ſo many Myriads fall'n, yet one
 Return'd not loſt: On to the ſacred hill
 They led him high applauded, and preſent
 Before the ſeat ſupream; from whence a voice
 From miſt a Golden Cloud thus mild was heard.
 Servant of God, well done, well haſt thou fought

The better fight, who single hast maintain'd 30
 Against revolted multitudes the Cause
 Of Truth, in word mightier than they in Arms;
 And for the testimony of Truth hast born
 Universal reproach, far worse to bear
 Than violence: for this was all thy care 35
 To stand approv'd in sight of God, tho' Worlds
 Judg'd thee perverse: the easier conquest now
 Remains thee, aided by this host of friends,
 Back on thy foes more glorious to return
 Than scorn'd thou didst depart, and to subdue 40
 By force, who reason for their Law refuse,
 Right reason for their Law, and for their King
Messiah, who by right of merit Reigns.
 Go *Michael* of Celestial Armies Prince,
 And thou in Military prowess next 45
Gabriel; lead forth to Battel these my Sons
 Invincible, lead forth my armed Saints
 By Thousands and by Millions rang'd for fight;
 Equal in number to that Godless crew
 Rebellious, them with Fixe and hostile Arms 50
 Fearless assault, and to the brow of Heav'n
 Pursuing drive them out from God and bliss
 Into their place of punishment, the Gulph
 Of *Tartarus*, which ready opens wide
 His fiery *Chaos* to receive their fall. 55
 So spake the Sov'reign voice, and Clouds began
 To darken all the Hill, and smoak to rowl
 In dusky wreathes, reluctant flames, the sign
 Of wrath awak'd: nor with less dread the loud

Ethereal Trumpet from on high gan blow :
 At which command the Powers Militant,
 That stood for Heav'n, in mighty Quadrate joyn'd
 Of Union irresistible, mov'd on
 In silence their bright Legions, to the sound
 Of instrumental Harmony that breath'd
 Heroic Ardor to adven'trous deeds
 Under their God-like Leaders, in the Cause
 Of God and his *Messiah*. On they move
 Indissolubly firm : nor obvious Hill,
 Nor streit'ning Vale, nor Wood, nor Stream divides
 Their perfect ranks ; for high above the ground
 Their march was, and the passive Air upbore
 Their nimble tread, as when the total kind
 Of Birds in orderly array on wing
 Came summon'd over *Eden* to receive
 Their names of thee ; so over many a tract
 Of Heav'n they march'd, and many a Province wide
 Tenfold the length of this terrene : at last
 Far in th' Horizon to the North appear'd
 From skirt to skirt a fiery Region, stretcht
 In battailous aspect, and nearer view
 Bristl'd with upright beams innumerable
 Of rigid Spears, and Helmets throng'd, and Shields
 Various, with boastful Argument portraid,
 The banded Powers of *Satan* hastening on
 With furious expedition ; for they ween'd
 That self same day by fight, or by surprize
 To win the Mount of God, and on his Throne
 To set the envier of his State, the proud

Aspirer, but their thoughts prov'd fond and vain 90
In the mid way; though strange to us it seem'd
At first, that Angel should with Angel war,
And in fierce hosting meet, who wont to meet
So oft, in Festivals of joy and love

Unanimous, as Sons of one great Sire 95
Hymning th' Eternal Father: but the shout
Of Battel new began, and rushing sound
Of onset ended soon each milder thought.
High in the midst exalted as a God

Th' Apostat in his Sun-bright Chariot sat 100
Idol of Majesty Divine, enclos'd

With flaming Cherubim, and golden Shields;
Then lighted from his gorgeous Throne, for now
'Twixt Host and Host but narrow space was left,
A dreadful interval, and Front to Front 105
Presented stood in terrible array

Of hideous length: before the cloudy Van,
On the rough edge of battel e'er it joyn'd,
Satan with vast and haughty strides advanc'd,
Came rowring, arm'd in Adamant and Gold; 110
Abdiel that sight endur'd not, where he stood
Among the mightiest, bent on highest deeds,
And thus his own undaunted heart explores.

O Heav'n! that such resemblance of the Highest
Should yet remain, where faith and realty 115
Remain not; wherefore should not strength and might
There fail where Virtue fails, or weakest prove
Where boldest; though to fight unconquerable?
His puissance, trusting in th' Almighty's aid,

I mean to try, whose Reason I have try'd 110
 Unsound and false; nor is it aught but just,
 That he who in debate of Truth hath won,
 Should win in Arms, in both disputes alike
 Victor; though brutish that contest and foul,
 When Reason hath to deal with force, yet so 115
 Most reason is that Reason overcome.

So pondering, and from his armed Peers
 Forth stepping opposite, half way he met
 His daring foe, at this prevention more
 Incens'd, and thus securely him defy'd. 120

Proud, art thou met? thy hope was to have reach'd
 The height of thy aspiring unoppos'd,
 The Throne of God ungarded, and his side
 Abandon'd at the terror of thy Power
 Or potent tongue; fool, not to think how vain 125
 Against th' Omnipotent to rise in Arms;
 Who out of smallest things could without end
 Have rais'd incessant Armies to defeat
 Thy folly; or with solitary hand
 Reaching beyond all limit at one blow 130
 Unaided could have finish'd thee, and whelm'd
 Thy Legions under darkness; but thou seest
 All are not of thy Train; there be who Faith
 Prefer, and Piety to God, though then
 To thee not visible. when I alone 135

Seem'd in thy World erroneous to dissent
 From all: my Sect thou seest, now learn too late
 How few sometimes may know, when thousands err.

Whom the grand foe with scornful eye askance

Thus answer'd. Ill for thee, but in wisht hour 150
 Of my revenge, first sought for thou returnst
 From flight, seditious Angel, to receive
 Thy merited reward, the first assay
 Of this right hand provokt, since first that tongue
 Inspir'd with contradiction durst oppose 155
 A third part of the Gods, in Synod met
 Their Deities to assert, who while they feel
 Vigour Divine within them, can allow
 Omnipotence to none. But well thou comst
 Before thy fellows, ambitious to win 160
 From me some Plume, that thy success may show
 Destruction to the rest: this pause between
 (Unanswer'd lest thou boast) to let thee know;
 At first I thought that Liberty and Heav'n
 To heav'nly Souls had been all one; but now 165
 I see that most through sloth had rather serve,
 Ministring Spirits, train'd up in Feast and Song;
 Such hast thou arm'd, the Minstrelsie of Heav'n,
 Servility with freedom to contend, 169
 As both their deeds compar'd this day shall prove.

To whom in brief thus *Abdiel* stern reply'd.
 Apostat, still thou err'st, nor end wilt find
 Of erring, from the path of truth remote:
 Unjustly thou deprav'st it with the name
 Of *Servitude* to serve whom God ordains, 175
 Or Nature; God and Nature bid the same,
 When he who rules is worthiest, and exoels
 Them whom he governs. This is servitude,
 To serve th' unwise, or him who hath rebell'd

Against his worthier, as thine now serve thee, 180
 Thy self not free, but to thy self enthrall'd;
 Yet leudly dar'st our ministring upbraid.

Reign thou in Hell thy Kingdom, let me serve
 In Heav'n-God ever blest, and his Divine
 Behests obey, worthiest to be obey'd, 185

Yet Chains in Hell, not Realms expect: mean while
 From me return'd, as erst thou saidst, from flight,
 This greeting on thy impious Crest receive.

So saying, a noble stroke he lifted high,
 Which hung not, but so swift with tempest fell 190
 On the proud Crest of *Satan*, that no sight,
 Nor motion of swift thought, less could his Shield
 Such ruin intercept: ten paces huge
 He back recoil'd; the tenth on bended knee
 His massie Spear upstaid; as if on Earth 195
 Winds under ground or waters forcing way
 Sidelong, had push'd a Mountain from his seat
 Half sunk with all his Pines. Amazement seisd
 The Rebel Thrones, but greater rage to see
 Thus foil'd their mightiest, ours joy fill'd, and shout,
 Prefage of Victory and fierce desire 201

Of Battel: whereat *Michael* bid sound
 Th' Arch-Angel trumpet; through the vast of Heaven
 It sounded, and the faithful Armies rung
Hosanna to the Highest: nor stood at gaze 205
 The adverse Legions, nor less hideous joyn'd
 The horrid shock: now storming fury rose,
 And clamour such as heard in Heav'n till now
 Was never, Arms on Armour clashing bray'd

Horrible discord, and the madding Wheels 210
 Of brazen Chariots rag'd; dire was the noise
 Of Conflict; over head the dismal hiss
 Of fiery Darts in flaming vollies flew,
 And flying vaulted either Host with fire.
 So under fiery Cope together rush'd 215
 Both Battels main, with ruinous assault
 And inextinguishable rage; all Heav'n
 Resounded, and had Earth been then, all Earth
 Had to her Center shook. What wonder? when
 Millions of fierce encountring Angels fought 220
 On either side, the least of whom could wield
 These Elements, and arm him with the force
 Of all their Regions: how much more of Power
 Army against Army numberless to raise
 Dreadful combustion warring, and disturb, 225
 Though not destroy, their happy Native seat;
 Had not th' Eternal King Omnipotent
 From his strong hold of Heav'n high over-rul'd
 And limited their might; though number'd such
 As each divided Legion might have seem'd 230
 A numerous Host, in strength each armed hand
 A Legion, led in fight, yet Leader seem'd
 Each Warriour single as in Chief, expert
 When to advance, or stand, or turn the sway
 Of Battel, open when, and when to close 235
 The ridges of grim War; no thought of flight,
 Nope of retreat, no unbecoming deed
 That argu'd fear; each on himself rely'd,
 As only in his arm the moment lay

Of victory; deeds of Eternal fame 249
 Were done, but infinite; for wide was spread
 That War and various; sometimes on firm ground
 A standing fight, then soaring on main wing
 Tormented all the Air; all Air seem'd then
 Conflicting Fire: long time in even scale 251
 The Battel hung; till *Satan*, who that day
 Prodigious Power had shewn, and met in Arms
 No equal, raunging through the dire Attack
 Of fighting Seraphim confus'd, at length
 Saw where the Sword of *Michael* smote, and fell'd
 Squadrons at once, with huge too-handed sway 253
 Brandisht aloft the horrid edge came down
 Wide wafting; such destruction to withstand
 He hasted, and oppos'd, the rocky Orb
 Of tenfold Adamant, his ample Shield 255
 A vast circumference: At his approach
 The great Arch-Angel from his warlike toils
 Surceas'd, and glad as hoping here to end
 Intestine War in Heav'n, the arch foe subdu'd
 Or Captive drag'd in Chains, with hostile frown 260
 And visage all enflam'd first thus began.

Author of evil, unknown till thy revolt,
 Unnam'd in Heav'n, now plenteous, as thou seest
 These Acts of hateful strife, hateful to all,
 Though heaviest by just measure on thy self 265
 And thy adherents: how hast thou disturb'd
 Heav'n's blessed peace, and into Nature brought
 Misery, uncreated till the crime
 Of thy Rebellion? how hast thou instill'd

Thy malice into thousands, once upright 270
 And faithful, now prov'd false. But think not here
 To trouble Holy Rest; Heav'n casts thee out
 From all her Confines. Heav'n the place of bliss
 Brooks not the works of violence and War.
 Hence then, and evil go with thee along 275
 Thy offspring, to the place of evil, Hell,
 Thou and thy wicked crew; there mingle broiles,
 E'er this avenging Sword begin thy doom,
 Or some more sudden vengeance wing'd from God
 Precipitate thee with augmented pain. 280

So spake the Prince of Angels; to whom thus
 The Adversary. Nor think thou with wind
 Of aerie threats to awe whom yet with deeds
 Thou canst not. Hast thou turn'd the least of these
 To flight, or if so fall, but that they rise 285
 Unvanquish'd, easier to transact with me
 That thou shouldst hope, imperious, and with threats
 To chase me hence? err not that so shall end
 The strife which thou call'st evil, but we style
 The strife of Glory: which we mean to win, 290
 Or turn this Heav'n it self into the Hell
 Thou fablest, here however to dwell free,
 If not to reign: mean while thy utmost force,
 And join him nam'd *Almighty* to thy aid,
 I flie not, but have sought thee far and nigh. 295

They ended parle, and both addrest for fight
 Unspeakable; for who, though with the tongue
 Of Angels, can relate, or to what things
 Liken on Earth conspicuous, that may list

Human imagination to such height 300
 Of Godlike Power: for likest Gods they seem'd,
 Stood they or mov'd, in stature, motion, arms
 Fit to decide the Empire of great Heav'n:
 Now wav'd their fiery Swords, and in the Aire
 Made horrid Circles; two broad Suns their Shields
 Blaz'd opposite, while expectation stood 306
 In horror; from each hand with speed retir'd
 Where erst was thickest fight, th' Angelic throng,
 And left large field, unsafe within the wind
 Of such commotion, such as to set forth 310
 Great things by small, If Natures concord broke,
 Among the Constellations war were sprung,
 Two Planets rushing from aspect malign
 Of fiercest opposition in mid Sky,
 Should combat, and their jarring Spears confound.
 Together both with next to Almighty Arm, 316
 Uplifted imminent one stroke they aim'd
 That might determine, and not need repeat,
 As not of power, at once; nor odds appear'd
 In might or swift prevention; but the sword 320
 Of *Michael* from the Armory of God
 Was giv'n him temper'd so, that neither keen
 Nor solid might resist that edge: it met
 The sword of *Satan* with steep force to smite
 Descending, and in half cut there, nor staid, 325
 But with swift wheele reverse, deep entring shar'd
 All his right side; then *Satan* first knew pain,
 And writh'd him to and fro convolv'd; so sore
 The griding sword with discontinuous wound

Pass'd through him, but th'Ethereal substance clos'd
 Not long divisible, and from the gash 331
 A stream of Nectarous humor issuing flow'd
 Sanguin, such as Celestial Spirits may bleed
 And all his Armour stain'd e'er while so bright.
 Forthwith on all sides to his aid was run 335
 By Angels many and strong, who interpos'd
 Defence, while others bore him on their Shields
 Back to his Chariot; where it stood retir'd
 From off the files of war; there they him laid
 Gnashing for anguish and despite and shame 340
 To find himself not matchless, and his pride
 Humbl'd by such rebuke, so far beneath
 His confidence to equal God in power.
 Yet soon he heal'd; for Spirits that live throughout
 Vital in every part, not as frail man 345
 In Entrails, Heart or Head, Liver or Reins,
 Cannot but by annihilating die;
 Nor in their liquid texture mortal wound
 Receive, no more than can the florid Aire:
 All Heart they live, all Head, all Eye, all Eare, 350
 All Intellect, all Sense, and as they please,
 They Limb themselves, and colour, shape and size
 Assume, as likes them best, condense or rare.
 Mean while in other parts like deeds deserv'd
 Memorial, where the might of *Gabriel* fought, 355
 And with fierce Ensigns pierc'd the deep array
 Of *Moloch* furious King, who him defy'd,
 And at his Chariot wheels to drag him bound
 Threaten'd, nor from the Holy One of Heav'n

Refrain'd his tongue blasphemous; but anon 364
 Down clov'n to the waste, with shatter'd Arms
 And uncouth pain fled bellowing. On each wing
Uriel and *Raphael* his vaunting foe
 Though huge, and in a Rock of Diamond Arm'd,
 Vanquish'd *Adramelec*, and *Asmadai*, 369
 Two potent Thrones, that to be less than Gods
 Disdain'd, but meaner thoughts learn'd in their flight
 Mangl'd with gaffly wounds thro' Plate and Mail
 Nor stood unmindful *Abdiel* to annoy
 The Atheist crew, but with redoubl'd blow 374
Ariel and *Arioc*, and the violence
 Of *Ramiel* scorcht and blasted overthrew.
 I might relate of thousands, and their names
 Eternize here on Earth; but those elect
 Angels contented with their fame in Heav'n 379
 Seek not the praise of men: the other sort
 In might though wondrous and in Acts of War,
 Nor of Renown less eager, yet by doom
 Cancel'd from Heav'n and sacred memorie,
 Nameless in dark oblivion let them dwell. 384
 For strength from Truth divided and from Just,
 Illaudable, naught merits but dispraise
 And ignominy, yet to glory aspires
 Vain glorious, and through infamy seeks fame:
 Therefore Eternal silence be their doom. 389

And now their Mightiest quell'd, the battel swerr'd,
 With many an invade gor'd; deformed rout
 Enter'd, and foul disorder; all the ground
 With shiver'd armour strown, and on a heap

Chariot and Charioteer lay overturn'd 390
 And fiery foaming Steeds; what flood, recoyl'd
 O'er-wearied, through the faint Satanic Host
 Defensive scarce, or with pale fear surpris'd,
 Then first with fear surpris'd and sense of pain
 Fled ignominious, to such evil brought 395
 By sin of disobedience, till that hour
 Not liable to fear or flight or pain.
 Far otherwise th' inviolable Saints -
 In Cubic Phalanx firm advanc'd entire,
 Invulnerable, impenitrably arm'd : 400
 Such high advantages their innocence
 Gave them above their foes, not to have sinn'd,
 Not to have disobey'd; in fight they stood
 Unwearied, unobnoxious to be pain'd 404
 By wound, tho' from their place by violence mov'd
 Now Night her course began, and over Heav'n
 Inducing darkness, grateful truce impos'd,
 And silence on the odious din of War:
 Under her Cloudy covert both retir'd,
 Victor and Vanquish'd: on the foughten field 410
 Michael and his Angels prevalent
 Encamping, plac'd in Guard their Watches round,
 Cherubic waving fires: on th' other part
 Satan with his rebellious disappear'd
 Far in the dark dislodg'd, and void of rest, 415
 His Potentates to Council call'd by night;
 And in the midst thus undismay'd began.

O now in danger try'd, now known in Arms
 Not to be overpower'd, Companions dear,

Found worthy not of Liberty alone, 420

Too mean pretence, but what we more affect,

Honour, Dominion, Glory, and Renown,

Who have sustain'd one day in doubtful fight

(And if one day, why not Eternal days?)

What Heavens Lord hath powerfulest to send 425

Against us from about his Throne, and judg'd

Sufficient to subdue us to his will.

But proves not so: then fallible, it seems,

Of future we may deem him, though till now

Omniscient thought. True is, less firmly arm'd, 430

Some disadvantage we endur'd and pain,

Till now not known, but known as soon contemn'd

Since now we find this our Empyrean form

Incapable of mortal injury

Imperishable, and though pierc'd with wound 435

Soon closing, and by native vigour heal'd.

Of evil then so small as ease think

The remedy; perhaps more valid Arms,

Weapons more violent, when next we meet,

May serve to better us, and worse our foes, 440

Or equal what between us made the odds,

In Nature none: if other hidden cause

Left them Superiour, while we can preserve

Unhurt our minds, and understanding sound,

Due search and consultation will disclose. 445

He sat; and in th' assembly next upstood

Nisroc, of Principalities the prime;

As one he stood escap'd from cruel fight,

Sore toil'd, his riv'n Arms to havoc hew'd.

And cloudy in aspect thus answering spake. 450
 Deliverer from new Lords, leader to free
 Enjoyment of our right as Gods; yet hard
 For Gods, and too unequal work we find
 Against unequal arms to fight in pain
 Against unpain'd, impassive; from which evil 455
 Ruin must needs ensue; for what avails
 Valour or strength, tho' matchless, quell'd with pain
 Which all subdues, and makes remiss the hands
 Of Mightiest. Sense of pleasure we may well
 Spare out of life perhaps, and not repine, 460
 But live content, which is the calmest life:
 But pain is perfect misery, the worst
 Of evils, and excessive, overturns
 All patience. He who therefore can invent
 With what more forcible we may offend 465
 Our yet unwounded Enemies, or arm
 Our selves with like defence, to me deserves
 No less than for deliverance what we owe.

Whereto with look compos'd *Satan* reply'd.
 Not uninvented that, which thou aright 470
 Believ'st so main to our success, I bring;
 Which of us who beholds the bright surface
 Of this Ethereous mould whereon we stand;
 This contingent of spacious Heav'n, adorn'd
 With Plant, Fruit, Flour Ambrosial, Gems and Gold,
 Whose Eye so superficially surveys 476
 These things, as not to mind from whence they grow
 Deep under ground, materials dark and crude,
 Of spiritous and fiery spume, till toucht

With Heav'n's ray, and temper'd they shoot forth
 So beauteous, op'ning to the ambient light. 481
 These in their dark Nativity the Deep
 Shall yield us pregnant with infernal flame,
 Which into hollow Engins long and round
 Thick-ramm'd, at th'other bore with touch of fire
 Dilated and infuriate shall send forth 486
 From far with thundring noise among our foes
 Such implements of mischief as shall dash
 To pieces, and o'erwhelm whatever stands
 Adverse, that they shall fear we have disarm'd 490
 The Thunderer of his only dreaded bolt.
 Nor long shall be our labour, yet e'er dawn,
 Effect shall end our wish. Mean while revive;
 Abandon fear; to strength and counsel join'd
 Think nothing hard, much less to be despair'd. 495
 He ended, and his words their drooping cheer
 Enlighten'd, and their languisht hope reviv'd.
 Th'invention all admir'd, and each, how he
 To be th'inventer mis'd, so easie it seem'd 499
 Once found, which yet unfound most would have
 Impossible: yet haply of thy Race [thought
 In future days, if Malice should abound,
 Some one intent on mischief, or inspir'd
 With dev'lish machination might devise
 Like instrument to plague the Sons of men 505
 For sin, on war and mutual slaughter bent.
 Forthwith from Council to the work they flew,
 None arguing stood, innumerable hands
 Were ready, in a moment up they turn'd

Book VI. PARADISE LOST. 183

Wide the Celestial soile; and saw beneath 510
Th' originals of Nature in their crude
Conception; Sulphurous and Nitrous Foame
They found, they mingl'd, and with subtle Art,
Concocted and adustd they reduc'd
To blackest grain, and into store convey'd: 515
Part hidd'n veins digg'd up (nor hath this Earth
Entrails unlike) of Mineral and Stone,
Whereof to found their Engins and their Balls
Of missive ruin; part incentive reed
Provide, pernicious with one touch to fire. 520
So all e'er day-spring, under conscious Night
Secret they finish'd, and in order set,
With silent circumspection unesp'y'd.
Now when fair Morn Orient in heav'n appear'd
Up rose the Victor Angels, and to Arms 525
The matin Trumpet Sung: in Arms they stood
Of Golden Panoply, refulgent Host,
Soon banded; others from the dawning Hills
Look'd round, and Scouts each Coast light-armed scour,
Each quarter, to descry the distant foe, 530
Where lodg'd, or whither fled, or if for fight,
In motion or in alt: him soon they met
Under spred Ensigns moving nigh, in flow
But firm Battalion; back with speediest Sail
Zaphiel, of Cherubim the swiftest wing, 535
Came flying, and in mid Air aloud thus cry'd.
Arm, Warriours, Arm for fight, the foe at hand,
Whom fled we thought, will save us long pursuit
This day, fear not his flight; so thick a Cloud

He comes, and settl'd in his face I see 54
 Sad resolution and secure: let each
 His Adamantine coat gird well, and each
 Fit well his Helm, gripe fast his orb'd Shield,
 Born even or high, for this day will pour down,
 If I conjecture aught, no drizzling Thowr, 54
 But ratling storm of arrows barb'd with fire.
 So warn'd he them aware themselves, and soon
 In order, quit of all impediment;
 Instant without disturb they took Allarm,
 And onward move Embattell'd; when behold 55
 Not distant far with heavy pace the Foe
 Approaching gross and huge; in hollow Cube
 Training his devilish Enginry, impal'd -
 On every side with shaddowing Squadrons Deep,
 To hide the fraud. At interview both stood 55
 A while, but suddenly at head appear'd
Satan: And thus was heard commanding loud.

Vanguard, to Right and Left the Front unfould;
 That all may see who hate us, how we seek
 Peace and composure, and with open brest 56
 Stand ready to receive them, if they like
 Our overture, and turn not back perverse;
 But that I doubt, however witness Heaven,
 Heav'n witness thou anon, while we discharge
 Freely our part; ye who appointed stand 56
 Do as you have in charge, and briefly touch
 What we propound, and loud that all may hear.
 So scoffing in ambiguous words, he scarce
 Had ended; when to Right and Left the Front.

divided, and to either Flank retir'd. 570
 Which to our eyes discover'd new and strange,
 A triple mounted row of Pillars laid
 On wheels (for like to Pillars most they seem'd
 Or hollow'd bodies made of Oak or Firr
 With branches lopt, in Wood or Mountain fell'd)
 Brass, Iron, Stony mould, had not their mouths 576
 With hideous orifice gap'd on us wide,
 Portending hollow truce; at each behind
 A Seraph stood, and in his hand a Reed
 Hood waving tip't with fire; while we suspense, 580
 Collected stood within our thoughts amus'd,
 Not long, for sudden all at once their Reeds
 Put forth, and to a narrow vent apply'd
 With nicest touch. Immediate in a flame, 584
 But soon obscur'd with smoak, all Heav'n appear'd,
 From these deep throated Engins belcht, whose roar
 Embowel'd with outrageous noise the Air,
 And all her entrails tore, disgorging foul
 Their devilish glut, chain'd Thunderbolts and Hail
 Of Iron Globes, which on the Victor Host 590
 Level'd, with such impetuous fury smote,
 That whom they hit, none on their feet might stand,
 Though standing else as Rocks, but down they fell
 By thousands, Angel on Arch-Angel rowl'd;
 The sooner for their Arms, unarm'd they might
 Have easily as Spirits evaded swift 596
 By quick contraction or remove; but now
 Foul dissipation follow'd and forc'd rout;
 Nor serv'd it to relax their ferr'd files.

What should they do? if on they rush, repulse
 Repeated, and indecent overthrow
 Doubl'd, would render them yet more despis'd,
 And to their foes a laughter; for in view
 Stood rankt of Seraphim another row
 In posture to displode their second tire
 Of Thunder: back defeated to return
 They worse abhorr'd. *Satan* beheld their plight,
 And to his Mates thus in derision call'd.

O Friends, why come not on these Victors proud
 E'er while they fierce were coming, and when w
 To entertain them fair with open Front
 And Brest, (what could we more?) propounded term
 Of composition, strait they chang'd their minds,
 Flew off, and into strange vagaries fell,
 As they would dance, yet for a dance they seem'
 Somewhat extravagant and wild, perhaps
 For joy of offer'd peace: but I suppose
 If our proposals once again were heard
 We should compel them to a quick result.

To whom thus *Belial* in like gamesom mood, 620
 Leader, the terms we sent were terms of weight,
 Of hard contents, and full of force urg'd home,
 Such as we might perceive amus'd them all,
 And stumbl'd many, who receives them right,
 Had need from head to foot well understand; 625
 Not understood, this gift they have besides,
 They shew us when our foes walk not upright.

So they among themselves in pleasant vein
 Stood scoffing, heighten'd in their thoughts beyond

No doubt of Victory, eternal might 630
 To march with their inventions they presum'd
 To ease, and of his Thunder made a scorn,
 And all his Host derided, while they stood
 A while in trouble; but they stood not long,
 Rage prompted them at length, and found them arms
 Against such hellish mischief fit to oppose. 636
 Forthwith (behold the excellence, the power
 Which God hath in his mighty Angels plac'd)
 Their Arms away they threw, and to the Hills
 For Earth hath this variety from Heav'n 640
 Of pleasurable situate in Hill or Dale)
 Light as the Lightning glimps they ran, they flew,
 From their Foundations looting to and fro
 They pluckt the seated Hills with all their load,
 Rocks, Waters, Woods, and by the shaggy tops 645
 Up-lifting bore them in their hands: Amaze,
 Be sure, and terror seis'd the rebel Host,
 When coming towards them so dread they saw
 The bottom of the Mountains upward turn'd,
 Till on those cursed Engins triple-row 650
 They saw them whelm'd, and all their confidence
 Under the weight of Mountains bury'd deep,
 Themselves invaded next, and on their heads
 Main Promontories flung, which in the Air 654
 Came shadowing, and oppress'd whole Legions arm'd,
 Their armour help'd their harm, crush'd in and bruis'd
 Into their substance pent, which wrought them pain
 Implacable, and many a dolorous groan,
 Long struggling underneath, e'er they could wind

Out of such prison, though Spirits of purest light,
Purest at first, now gross by sinning grown. 66

The rest in imitation to like Arms

Betook them, and the neighbouring Hills upreared;

So Hills amid the Aire encounter'd Hills

Hurl'd to and fro with jaculation dire, 67

That under ground they fought in dismal shade;

Infernal noise; War seem'd a civil Game

To this uproar; horrid confusion heapt

Upon confusion roil; and now all Heav'n

Had gone to wrack, with ruin overspread, 68

Had not th' Almighty Father where he sits

Shrin'd in his Sanctuary of Heav'n secure,

Consulting on the sum of things, foreseen

This tumult, and permitted all, advis'd:

That his great purpose he might so fulfil, 69

To honour his Anointed Son aveng'd

Upon his enemies, and to declare,

All power on him transferr'd: whence to his Son

Th' Assessor of his Throne he thus began.

Effulgence of my Glory, Son belov'd, 70

Son in whose face invisible is beheld

Visibly, what by Deity I am,

And in whose hand what by Decree I do,

Second Omnipotence, two days are past,

Two days, as we compute the days of Heav'n, 71

Since *Michael* and his Powers went out to tame

These disobedient; sore hath been their fight,

As likeliest was, when two such foes met arm'd;

For to themselves I left them, and thou knowst,

Equal in their Creation they were form'd, 690
 And what sin hath impair'd, which yet hath wrought
 Insensibly, for I suspend their doom ;
 Whence in perpetual fight they needs must last
 Endless, and no solution will be found :
 War wearied hath perform'd what War can do, 695
 And to disorder'd rage let loose the reins.
 With Mountains as with Weapons arm'd, which makes
 Wild work in Heav'n, and dangerous to the main.
 Two days are therefore past, the third is thine ;
 For thee I have ordain'd it, and thus far 700
 Have suffer'd, that the Glory may be thine
 Of ending this great War, since none but Thou
 Can end it. Into thee such Virtue and Grace
 Immense I have transfus'd, that all may know
 In Heav'n and Hell thy Power without compare, 705
 And this perverse Commotion govern'd thus,
 To manifest thee worthiest to be Heir
 Of all things, to be Heir and to be King
 By Sacred Unction, thy deserved right.
 Go then thou Mightiest in thy Father's might, 710
 Ascend my Chariot, guide the rapid Wheels
 That shake Heav'n's Basis, bring forth all my War,
 My Bow and Thunder, my Almighty Arms
 Gird on, and Sword upon thy puissant Thigh ;
 Pursue these sons of Darkness, drive them out 715
 From all Heav'n's bounds into the utter Deep :
 There let them learn, as likes them, to despise
 God and *Messiah* his anointed King.
 He said, and on his Son with Rayes direct

Shon full, he all his Father full exprest
 Ineffably into his face receiv'd,
 And thus the filial Godhead answering spake.

O Father, O Supream of heav'nly Thrones,
 First, Highest, Holiest, Best, thou always seek'st
 To glorifie thy Son, I always thee,
 As is most just; this I my Glory account,
 My exaltation, and my whole delight,
 That thou in me well pleas'd, declar'st thy will
 Fulfill'd, which to fulfil is all my bliss.
 Scepter and Power, thy giving, I assume,
 And gladder shall resign, when in the end
 Thou shalt be All in All, and I in thee
 For ever, and in me all whom thou lov'st:
 But whom thou hat'st, I hate, and can put on
 Thy terrors, as I put thy mildness on,
 Image of thee in all things; and shall soon,
 Arm'd with thy might, rid Heav'n of those rebell'd,
 To their prepar'd ill Mansion driven down
 To chains of darkness, and th' undying Worm,
 That from thy just obedience could revolt,
 Whom to obey is happiness entire.
 Then shall thy Saints unmixt, and from th' impure
 Far separate, circling thy holy Mount
 Unfain'd *Hallelujahs* to thee sing,
 Hymns of high praise, and I among them chief.
 So said, he o'er his Scepter bowing, rose
 From the right hand of Glory where he sat,
 And the third sacred Morn began to shine
 Dawning through Heav'n: forth rush'd with whirl-
 [wind sound

The Chariot of Paternal Deity, 750
 athing thick flames, Wheel within Wheel undrawn,
 a self instinct with Spirit; but convoy'd
 by four Cherubic shapes, four Faces each -
 Had wondrous, as with Stars their bodies all
 and Wings were set with Eyes, with Eyes the wheels
 Of Beril, and careering Fires between; 756
 Over their heads a chrystal Firmament,
 Whereon a Saphir Throne, inlaid with pure
 Amber, and colours of the showry Arch.
 He in Celestial Panoply all arm'd 760
 Of radiant *Urim*, work divinely wrought,
 Ascended, at his right hand Victory
 Sate Eagle-wing'd, beside him hung his Bow
 And Quiver with three-bolted Thunder stor'd.
 And from about him fierce Effusion rowl'd 765
 Of smok and bickering flame, and sparkles dire;
 Attended with ten thousand thousand Saints,
 He onward came, far off his coming shon,
 And twenty thousand (I their number heard)
 Chariots of God, half on each hand were seen: 770
 He on the wings of Cherub rode sublime
 On the Chrystallin Sky, in Saphir Thron'd.
 Illustrious far and wide, but by his own
 First seen, them unexpected joy surpris'd,
 When the great Ensign of *Messiah* blaz'd 775
 Aloft by Angels born, his Sign in Heav'n:
 Under whose conduct *Michael* soon reduc'd
 His Army, circumfus'd on either Wing,
 Under their Head imbody'd all in one.

Before him Power Divine his way prepar'd;
 At his command the uprooted Hills retir'd
 Each to his place, they heard his voice and were
 Obsequious, Heav'n his wonted face renew'd,
 And with fresh Flourets Hill and Valley smil'd.
 This saw his hapless Foes but stood obdur'd,
 And to rebellious fight rallied their Powers
 Insensate, hope conceiving from despair.
 In heav'nly Spirits could such perverseness dwell?
 But to convince the proud what Signs avail,
 Or Wonders move th' obdurate to relent?
 They harden'd more by what might most reclaim,
 Grieving to see his Glory, at the sight
 Took envy, and aspiring to his height,
 Stood reibattell'd fierce, by force or fraud
 Weening to prosper, and at length prevail
 Against God and *Messiah*, or to fall
 In universal ruin last, and now
 To final Battel drew, disdaining flight,
 Or faint retreat; when the great Son of God
 To all his Host on either hand thus spake.

Stand still in bright array ye Saints, here stand
 Ye Angels arm'd, this day from Battel rest;
 Faithful hath been your warfare, and of God
 Accepted, fearless in his righteous Cause,
 And as ye have receiv'd, so have ye done
 Invincibly; but of this cursed crew
 The punishment to other hand belongs,
 Vengeance is his, or whose he sole appoints;
 Number to this days work is not ordain'd

Nor multitude, stand only and behold 810
 God's indignation on these Godless pour'd
 By me, not you but me they have despis'd,
 Yet envied; against me is all their rage,
 Because the Father, t'whom in Heav'n supream
 Kingdom and Power and Glory appertains, 815
 Hath honour'd me according to his will.
 Therefore to me their doom he hath assign'd;
 That they may have their wish; to try with me
 In Battel which the stronger proves, they all,
 Or I alone against them, since by strength 820
 They measure all, of other excellence
 Not emulous, nor care who them excels;
 Nor other strife with them do I vouchsafe.

So spake the Son, and into terrour chang'd
 His count'nance too severe to be beheld 825
 And full of wrath bent on his Enemies.
 At once the Four spread out their Starry wings
 With dreadful shade contiguous, and the Orbes
 Of his fierce Chariot rowl'd, as with the sound
 Of torrent Floods, or of a numerous Host. 830
 He on his impious Foes right onward drove,
 Gloomy as Night; under his burning Wheels
 The steadfast Empyrean shook throughout,
 All but the Throne it self of God. Full soon
 Among them he arriv'd; in his right hand 835
 Grasping ten thousand Thunders, which he sent
 Before him, such as in their Souls infix'd
 Plagues; they astonisht all resistance lost,
 All courage; down the idle weapons drop'd;

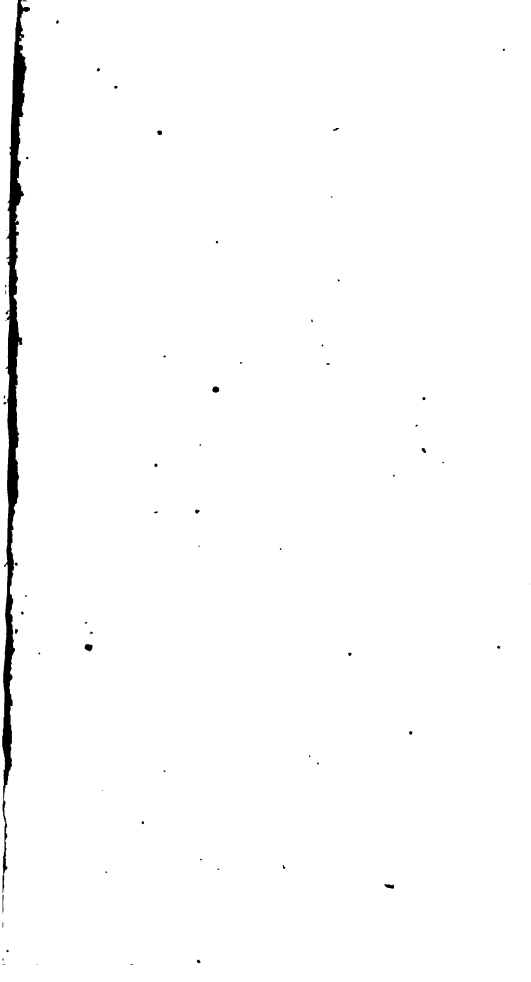
O'er Shields and Helms, and helmed Heads heron
 Of Thrones and mighty Seraphim prostrate, 40
 That wist the Mountains now might be again
 Thrown on them as a shelter from his ire.
 Nor less on either side tempestuous fell
 His arrows, from the fourfold-visag'd Four, 50
 Distinct with eyes, and from the living wheels
 Distinct alike with multitudes of eyes,
 One Spirit in them rul'd, and every eye
 Glar'd lightning, and shot forth pernicious fire :
 Among th' accurst, that wither'd all their strength
 And of their wonted vigour left them drain'd, 60
 Exhausted, spiritless, afflicted, fall'n.
 Yet half his strength he put not forth, but check'd
 His Thunder in mild volly, for he meant
 Not to destroy, but root them out of Heav'n : 70
 The overthrown he rais'd, and as a Herd
 Of Goats or timorous flock together throng'd
 Drove them before him Thunder-struck, pursu'd
 With terrors and with furies to the bounds
 And Chrystal wall of Heav'n, which op'ning wide
 Rowl'd inward, and a spacious Gap disclos'd 80
 Into the wasteful Deep ; the monstrous sight
 Strook them with horror backward, but far worse
 Urg'd them behind ; headlong themselves they throng'd
 Down from the verge of Heav'n, Eternal wrath to
 Burnt after them to the bottomless pit.

Hell heard th'un sufferable noise, Hell saw
 Heav'n ruining from Heav'n, and would have fled
 Affrighted ; but strict Fate had cast too deep

Her dark foundations, and too fast had bound. 870
 Nine days they fell ; confounded *Chaos* roar'd
 And felt tenfold confusion in their fall
 Through his wild Anarchy, so huge a rout
 Incumber'd him with ruin : Hell at last
 Yawning receiv'd them whole, and on them clos'd,
 Hell their fit habitation fraught with fire 876
 Unquenchable, the house of woe and pain.
 Disburden'd Heav'n rejoic'd, and soon repair'd
 Her mural breach, returning whence it rowl'd.
 Sole Victor from th' expulsion of his Foes 880
Messiah his triumphal Chariot turn'd :
 To meet him all his Saints, who silent stood
 Eye-witnesses of his Almighty Acts,
 With Jubilee advanc'd; and as they went,
 Shaded with branching Palm, each order bright, 885
 Sung Triumph, and him sung Victorious King,
 Son, Heir, and Lord, to him Dominion giv'n,
 Worthiest to Reign : he celebrated rode
 Triumphant through mid Heav'n, into the Courts
 And Temple of his mighty Father Thron'd 890
 On high : who into Glory him receiv'd,
 Where now he sits at the right hand of blifs.
 Thus measuring things in Heav'n by things on Earth
 At thy request, and that thou maist beware
 By what is past, to thee I have reveal'd 895
 What might have else to human Race been hid;
 The discord which besel, and War in Heav'n
 Among th' Angelic Powers, and the deep fall
 Of those too high aspiring, who rebell'd

With *Satan*, he who envies now thy state,
Who now is plotting how he may seduce
Thee also from obedience, that with him
Bereav'd of happiness thou mayst partake
His punishment, Eternal misery;
Which would be all his solace and revenge,
As a despite done against the most High,
Thee once to gain Companion of his woe.
But list'n not to his Temptations, warn
Thy weaker; let it profit thee to have heard
By terrible Example the reward
Of disobedience: firm they might have stood,
Yet fell; remember, and fear to transgress.

The End of the Sixth Book.







Paradise Lost.

BOOK VII.

The ARGUMENT.

Raphael at the request of Adam relates how and wherefore this world was first created; that God, after the expelling of Satan and his Angels out of Heaven, declar'd his pleasure to create another World and other Creatures to dwell therein; sends his Son with Glory and attendance of Angels to perform the work of Creation in six days: the Angels celebrate with Hymns the performance thereof, and his reascension into Heaven.

DEscend from Heav'n *Urania*, by that name
 If rightly thou art call'd, whose Voice divine
 Following, above th' *Olympian* Hill I soare,
 Above the flight of *Pegasean* wing.

The meaning, not the Name I call: for thou
 Nor of the *Muses* nine, nor on the top
 Of old *Olympus* dwell'st, but Heav'nly born,
 Before the Hills appear'd, or Fountain flow'd,
 Thou with Eternal wisdom didst converse,
 Wisdom thy Sister, and with her didst play
 In presence of th' Almighty Father, pleas'd
 With thy Celestial Song. Up led by thee
 Into the Heav'n of Heav'ns I have presum'd,
 An Earthly Guest, and drawn Empyrean Aire,
 Thy tempring; with like safety guided down
 Return me to my Native Element:

Left from this flying Steed unrein'd, (as once
Bellerophon, though from a lower Clime)
 Dismounted, on th' *Aleian* Field I fall
 Erroneous there to wander and forlorn.

Half yet remains unsung, but narrower bound
 Within the visible Diurnal Spheare;

Standing on Earth, not rapt above the Pole,
 More safe I Sing with mortal voice, unchang'd
 To hoarse or mute, though fall'n on evil days, 25
 On evil days though fall'n, and evil tongues;
 In darkness, and with dangers compass'd round,
 And solitude; yet not alone, while thou
 Visit'st my slumbers Nightly, or when Morn

Purples the East: still govern thou my Song, 30
 Urania, and fit audience find, though few:
 But drive far off the barbarous dissonance
 Of *Bacchus* and its revellers, the Race
 Of that wild Rout that tore the *Thracian* Bard
 In *Rhodope*, where Woods and Rocks had Ears 35
 To rapture, till the savage clamour dround
 Both Harp and Voice; nor could the Muse defend
 Her Son. So fail not thou, who thee implores:
 For thou art Heav'nly, she an empty dream.
 Say Goddess, what ensu'd when *Raphael*, 40
 The affable Arch-Angel, had forewarn'd
Adam by dire example to beware
 Apostasie, by what befel in Heav'n
 To those Apostates, lest the like befall
 In Paradise to *Adam* or his Race, 45
 Charg'd not to touch the interdicted Tree,
 If they transgress, and slight that sole command,
 So easily obey'd amid the choice
 Of all tastes else to please their appetite,
 Though wandring. He with his consorted *Eve* 50
 The story heard attentive, and was fill'd
 With admiration, and deep Muse to hear
 Of things so high and strange, things to their thought
 So unimaginable as hate in Heav'n,
 And War so near the Peace of God in Bliss 55
 With such confusion: but the evil soon
 Driv'n back redounded as a flood on those
 From whom it sprung, impossible to mix
 With Blessedness. Whence *Adam* soon repeal'd.

The doubts that in his heart arose: and now 60
 Led on, yet sinless, with desire to know
 What nearer might concern him, how this World
 Of Heav'n and Earth conspicuous first began,
 When, and whereof created, for what cause,
 What within *Edea* or without was done 65
 Before his memorie, as one whose drouth
 Yet scarce allay'd still eyes the current stream,
 Whose liquid murmur heard new thirst excites,
 Proceeded thus to ask his Heav'nly Guest.

Great things, and full of wonder in our ears, 70
 Far differing from this World, thou hast reveal'd
 Divine interpreter, by favour sent
 Down from the Empyrean to forewarn
 Us timely of what might else have been our loss,
 Unknown, which humanknowledge could not reach,
 For which to the infinitely Good we owe 76
 Immortal thanks, and his admonishment
 Receive with solemn purpose to observe
 Immutably his sovereign will, the end
 Of what we are. But since thou hast vouchsaf'd 80
 Gently for our instruction to impart
 Things above Earthly thought, which yet concern'd
 Our knowing, as to the highest wisdom seem'd,
 Deign to descend now lower, and relate
 What may no less perhaps avail us known, 85
 How first began this Heav'n which we behold
 Distant so high, with moving Fires adorn'd
 Innumerable, and this which yields or fills
 All space, the ambient Aire wide interfus'd

Embracing round this florid Earth, what cause 90
 Mov'd the Creator in his holy Rest
 Through all Eternity so late to build
 In *Chaos*, and the work begins; how soon
 Absolv'd, if unforbid thou maist unfold
 What we, not to explore the secrets ask 95
 Of his Eternal Empire, but the more
 To magnifie his works, the more we know.
 And the great Light of Day yet wants to run
 Much of his Race though steep, suspens in Heav'n
 Held by thy voice, thy potent voice he hears, 100
 And longer will delay to hear thee tell
 His Generation, and the rising Birth
 Of Nature from the unapparent Deep:
 Or if the Star of Evening and the Moon
 Haste to thy audience, Night with her will bring
 Silence, and Sleep listening to thee will watch, 106
 Or we can bid his absence, till thy Song
 End, and dismiss thee e'er the Morning shine.
 Thus *Adam* his illustrious Guest besought:
 And thus the Godlike Angel answer'd mild. 110
 This also thy request with caution askt
 Obtain: though to recount Almighty works
 What words or tongue of Seraph can suffice,
 Or heart of man suffice to comprehend?
 Yet what thou canst attain, which best may serve 115
 To glorifie the Maker, and infer
 Thee also happier, shall not be withheld
 Thy hearing, such Commission from above:
 I have receiv'd, to answer thy desire.

Of knowledge within bounds; beyond abstain 126
 To ask, nor let thine own inventions hope
 Things not reveal'd, which th' invisible King,
 Only Omniscient, hath suppress'd in Night,
 To none communicable in Earth or Heav'n:
 Enough is left besides to search and know. 128
 But knowledge is as food, and needs no less
 Her Temperance over Appetite, to know
 In measure what the mind may well contain,
 Oppresses else with Surfeit, and soon turns
 Wisdom to Folly, as Nourishment to Wind. 130

Know then, that after *Lucifer* from Heav'n
 (So call him, brighter once amidst the Host
 Of Angels, than that Star the Stars among)
 Fell with his flaming Legions through the Deep
 Into his place, and the great Son return'd 135
 Victorious with his Saints, th'Omnipotent
 Eternal Father from his Throne beheld
 Their multitude, and to his Son thus spake.

At least our envious Foe hath fail'd, who thought
 All like himself rebellious, by whose aid 140
 This inaccessible high strength, the seat
 Of Deity supreme, us dispossess'd,
 He trusted to have seiz'd, and into fraud
 Drew many, whom their place knows here no more;
 Yet far the greater part have kept, I see, 145
 Their station, Heav'n yet populous retains
 Number sufficient to possess her Realms
 Though wide, and this high Temple to frequent
 With Ministeries due and solemn Rites;

But left his heart exalt him in the harm 150
 Already done, to have dispeopl'd Heav'n
 My damage fondly deem'd, I can repair,
 That detriment, if such it be to lose
 Self-lost, and in a moment will create
 Another World, out of one man a Race 155
 Of men innumerable, there to dwell,
 Not here, till by degrees of merit rais'd
 They open to themselves at length the way
 Up hither, under long obedience try'd, 159
 And Earth be chang'd to Heav'n; and Heav'n to Earth;
 One Kingdom, Joy and Union without end.
 Mean while inhabit lax, ye Powers of Heav'n;
 And thou my Word, begotten Son, by thee
 This I perform, speak thou, and be it done :
 My overshadowing Spirit and might with thee 165
 I fend along, ride forth, and bid the Deep
 Within appointed bounds be Heav'n and Earth,
 Boundless the Deep, because I am who fill
 Infinitude, nor vacuous the space.
 Though I uncircumscrib'd my self retire, 170
 And put not forth my goodness, which is free
 To act or not, Necessity and Chance
 Approach not me, and what I will is Fate:
 So spake th' Almighty, and to what he spake
 His Word, the filial Godhead, gave effect. 175
 Immediate are the Acts of God, more swift
 Than time or motion, but to human ears
 Cannot without process of speech be told,
 So told as earthly motion can receive.

Great triumph and rejoycing was in Heav'n 180
 When such was heard declar'd the Almighty's will
 Glory they sung to the most High, good will
 To future men, and in their dwellings peace:
 Glory to him whose just avenging ire
 Had driv'n out th' ungodly from his sight 185
 And th' habitations of the just; to him
 Glory and praise, whose wisdom had ordain'd
 Good out of evil to create, instead
 Of Spirits malign a better Race to bring
 Into their vacant room, and thence diffuse 190
 His good to Worlds and Ages infinite.
 So sang the Hierarchies: Mean while the Son
 On his great Expedition now appear'd,
 Girt with Omnipotence, with Radiancè crown'd
 Of Majesty Divine, Sapience and Love: 195
 Immense, and all his Father in him shon.
 About his Chariot numberless were pour'd
 Cherub and Seraph, Potentates and Thrones,
 And Virtues, winged Spirits, and Chariots wing'd,
 From the Armoury of God, where stand of old 200
 Myriads between two brazen Mountains lodg'd
 Against a solemn day, harvest at hand,
 Celestial Equipage; and now came forth
 Spontaneous, for within them Spirit liv'd,
 Attendant on their Lord: Heav'n open'd wide 205
 Her ever durning Gates, Harmonious sound
 On golden Hinges moving, to let forth
 The King of Glory in his powerful Word
 And Spirit coming to create new Worlds.

On heav'nly ground they stood, and from the shore
They view'd the vast immeasurable Abyss 211

Outragious as a Sea, dark, wasteful, wild,
Up from the bottom turn'd by furious winds
And surging waves, as Mountains to assault
Heav'n's height, and with the Center mix the Pole.

Silence, ye troubl'd waves, and thou Deep, peace,
Said then th' Omnific Word, your discord end:

Nor staid, but on the Wings of Cherubim
Uplifted, In Paternal Glory rode
Far into *Chaos*, and the World unborn ; 220

For *Chaos* heard his voice: him all his Train
Follow'd in bright procession to behold
Creation, and the wonders of his might.

Then staid the fervid Wheels, and in his hand
He took the golden Compasses, prepar'd 225

In God's Eternal store, to circumscribe
This Universe, and all created things:
One foot he center'd, and the other turn'd
Round through the vast profundity obscure,
And said, thus far extend, thus far thy bounds, 230
This be thy just Circumference, O World.

Thus God the Heav'n created, thus the Earth,
Matter unform'd and void: Darkness profound
Cover'd th' Abyss: but on the watry calm
His brooding wings the Spirit of God outspread, 235
And vital virtue infus'd, and vital warmth
Throughout the fluid Mass, but downward purg'd
The black tartareous cold Infernal dregs
Adverse to life: then founded, then conglob'd

Like things to like, the rest to several place 240
 Disparted, and between spun out the Air,
 And Earth self ballanc'd on her Center hung.

Let there be Light, said God, and forthwith Light
 Ethereal, first of things, quintessence pure
 Sprung from the Deep, and from her Native East 245
 To journey through the aerie gloom began;
 Sphear'd in a radiant Cloud, for yet the Sun
 Was not; she in a cloudy Tabernacle
 Sojourn'd the while. God saw the Light was good;
 And light from darkness by the Hemisphere 250
 Divided: Light the Day, and Darkness Night
 He nam'd. Thus was the first Day Eev'n and Morn:
 Nor past uncelebrated, nor unsung
 By the Celestial Quires, when Orient Light
 Exhaling first from Darkness they beheld; 255
 Birth-day of Heav'n and Earth; with joy and shout
 The hollow universal Orb they fill'd,
 And touch'd their Golden Harps, and hymning prais'd
 God and his works, Creator him they sung, 260
 Both when first Eevning was, and when first Morn.

Again, God said, let there be Firmament
 Amid the Waters, and let it divide
 The Waters from the Waters: and God made
 The Firmament, expanse of liquid, pure,
 Transparent, Elemental Air, diffus'd 265
 In circuit to the uttermost convex
 Of this great Round: partition firm and sure,
 The Waters underneath from those above
 Dividing: for as Earth, so he the World.

Built on circumfluous Waters calm, in wide 270
Cryſtallin Ocean, and the loud miſrule
Of *Chaos* far remov'd, left fierce extreams
Contiguous might diſtemper the whole frame :
And Heav'n he nam'd the Firmament : So Eev'n
And Morning *Chorus* ſung the ſecond Day. 275

The Earth was form'd, but in the Womb as yet
Of Waters, Embryon immature involv'd,
Appear'd not : over all the face of Earth
Main Ocean flow'd, not idle, but with warm
Prolifick humour ſoft'ning all her Globe, 280
Fermented the great Mother to conceive,
Satiate with genial moiſture, when God ſaid
Be gather'd now ye Waters under Heav'n
Into one place, and let dry Land appear.
Immediately the Mountains huge appear 285
Emergent, and their broad bare backs upheave
Into the Clouds, their tops aſcend the Sky :
So high as heav'd the tumid Hills, ſo low
Down ſunk a hollow bottom broad and deep,
Capacious bed of Waters : thither they 290
Haſted with glad precipitance, uprowl'd
As drops on duſt conglobing from the dry ;
Part riſe in cryſtal Wall, or ridge direct,
For haſte ; ſuch flight the great command impreſs'd
On the ſwift floods : as Armies at the call 295
Of Trumpet (for of Armies thou haſt heard)
Troop to their Standard, ſo the watry throng,
Wave rowling after Wave, where way they found,
If ſteep, with torrent rapture, if through Plain,

Soft-ebbing; nor withstood them Rock or Hill, 300
 But they, or under ground, or circuit wide
 With Serpent error wandering, found their way,
 And on the washy Oose deep Channels wore;
 Easie, e'er God had bid the ground be dry,
 All but within those banks, where Rivers now 305
 Stream, and perpetual draw their humid train.
 The dry Land, Earth, and the great receptacle
 Of congregated Waters he call'd Seas:
 And saw that it was good, and said, Let th' Earth
 Put forth the verdant Grass, Herb yielding Seed, 310
 And Fruit Tree yielding Fruit after her kind;
 Whose Seed is in her self upon the Earth.
 He scarce had said, when the bare Earth, till then
 Desert and bare, unsightly, unadorn'd,
 Brought forth the tender Grass, whose verdure clad
 Her Universal Face with pleasant green, 316
 Then Herbs of every leaf, that sudden flour'd
 Op'ning their various colours, and made gay
 Her bosom smelling sweet: and these scarce blown,
 Forth flourish'd thick the clustring Vine, forth crept
 The smelling Gourd, up stood the corny Reed 321
 Embattell'd in her field: and the humble Shrub,
 And Bush with frizl'd hair implicit: last.
 Rose as in Dance the stately Trees, and spread 324
 Their branches hung with copious Fruit; or gemm'd
 Their blossoms: with high woods the hills were
 With tufts the vallies and each fountain side, [crown'd,
 With borders long the Rivers. That Earth now
 Seem'd like to Heav'n, a seat where Gods might dwell.

To wander with delight, and love to haunt 330
 Her sacred shades: though God had yet not rain'd
 Upon the Earth, and man to till the ground
 None was, but from the Earth a dewy Mist
 Went up and water'd all the ground, and each
 Plant of the field, which e'er it was in the Earth 335
 God made, and every Herb, before it grew
 On the green stem; God saw that it was good.
 So Ev'n and Morn recorded the Third Day.

Again th' Almighty spake: Let there be Lights
 High in th' expanse of Heav'n to divide 340
 The Day from Night; and let them be for Signs,
 For Seasons, and for Days, and circling Years,
 And let them be for Lights as I ordain
 Their Office in the Firmament of Heav'n
 To give Light on the Earth; and it was so. 345
 And God made two great Lights, great for their use
 To Man, the greater to have rule by Day,
 The less by Night alterne: and made the Stars,
 And set them in the Firmament of Heav'n
 To illuminate the Earth, and rule the Day 350
 In their vicissitude, and rule the Night,
 And Light from Darkness to divide. God saw,
 Surveying his great Work, that it was good:
 For of Celestial Bodies first the Sun
 A mighty Sphere he fram'd, unlightfom first, 355
 Tho' of Ethereal Mould: then form'd the Moon
 Globose, and every magnitude of Stars,
 And sow'd with Stars the Heav'n thick as a field:
 Of Light by far the greater part he took,

Transplanted from her cloudy Shrine, and plac'd 36
 In the Sun's Orb, made porous to receive
 And drink the liquid Light, firm to retain
 Her gather'd beams, great Palace now of Light.
 Hither as to their Fountain other Stars
 Repairing, in their golden Urns draw Light, 36
 And hence the Morning Planet guilds her horns;
 By tincture or reflection they augment
 Their small peculiar, though from human sight
 So far remote, with diminution seen.
 First in his East the glorious Lamp was seen, 37
 Regent of Day, and all th' Horizon round
 Invested with bright Rays, jocond to run
 His Longitude through Heav'ns high rode: the gray
 Dawn, and the *Pleiades* before him danc'd
 Shedding sweet influence: less bright the Moon, 37
 But opposite in level'd West was set
 His mirror, with full face borrowing her Light
 From him, for other light she needed none
 In that aspect, and still that distance keeps
 Till night, then in the East her turn she shines, 38
 Revolv'd on Heav'ns great Axle, and her Reign
 With thousand lesser Lights dividual holds,
 With thousand thousand Stars, that then appear'd
 Spangling the Hemisphere: then first adorn'd
 With their bright Luminaries that Set and Rose, 38
 Glad Evening and glad Morn crown'd the fourth day.
 And God said, let the Waters generate
 Reptil with Spawn abundant, living Soul:
 And let Fowle flie above the Earth, with wings

lay'd on the op'n Firmament of Heav'n. 390
 God created the great Whales, and each
 living, each that crept, which plenteously
 waters generated by their kinds,
 every Bird of wing after his kind;
 saw that it was good, and bless'd them, saying,
 fruitful, multiply, and in the Seas 396
 Lakes and running Streams the waters fill;
 let the Fowle be multiply'd on the Earth.
 with the Sounds and Seas, each Creek and Bay
 with Frie innumerable swarm, and Shoals 400
 Fish that with their Fins and shining Scales
 glide under the green Wave, in Sculls that oft
 seek the mid Sea: part single or with mate
 seize the Sea weed their pasture, and thro' Groves
 of Coral stray, or sporting with quick glance 405
 bow to the Sun their wav'd coats dropt with Gold
 Or in their Pearly shells at ease, attend
 Moist nutriment, or under Rocks their food
 in jointed Armour watch: on smooth the Seal,
 And bended Dolphins play: part huge of bulk 410
 Wallowing unweildy, enormous in their Gate
 Tempest the Ocean: there Leviathan
 Hugest of living Creatures, on the Deep
 Stretcht like a Promontory sleeps or swims,
 And seems a moving Land, and at his Gills 415
 Draws in, and at his Trunck spouts out a Sea.
 Mean while the tepid Caves, and Fens and shoars
 Their Brood as numerous hatch, from the Egg that soon
 Bursting with kindly rapture forth disclos'd

Their callow young, but feather'd soon and sledge 42
 They summ'd their Pens, and soaring th' air sublime
 With clang despis'd the ground, under a cloud
 In prospect; there the Eagle and the Stork
 On Cliffs and Cedar tops their Eyries build:
 Part loosely wing the Region, part more wise 43
 In common, rang'd in figure wedge their way,
 Intelligent of seasons, and set forth
 Their Aerie Caravan high over Seas
 Flying, and over Lands with mutual wing
 Easing their flight; so steers the prudent Crane 44
 Her annual voyage, born on Winds; the Aire
 Floats, as they pass, fann'd with unnumber'd plumes:
 From Branch to Branch the smaller Birds with song
 Solac'd the Woods, and spread their painted wings
 Till Eev'n, nor then the solemn Nightingal 45
 Ceas'd warbling, but all night tun'd her soft layes:
 Others on Silver Lakes and Rivers Bath'd
 Their downy Breast; the Swan with Arched neck
 Between her white wings mantling proudly, Rows
 Her state with Oary feet: yet oft they quit 46
 The Dank, and rising on stiff Pennons, towre
 The mid Aereal Sky: Others on ground
 Walk'd firm; the crested Cock whose clarion sounds
 The silent hours, and th' other whose gay Train
 Adorns him, colour'd with the Florid hue 47
 Of Rainbows and Starry Eyes. The Waters thus
 With Fish replenisht, and the Aire with Fowle,
 Evning and Morn solemniz'd the Fifth day.
 The Sixth, and of Creation last arose

With Evening Harps and Mattin, when God said, 450
 Let th'Earth bring forth Fowle living in her kind,
 Cattel and Creeping things, and Beast of the Earth,
 Each of their kind. The Earth obey'd, and strait
 Opening her fertile Womb teem'd at a Birth
 Numerous living Creatures, perfect forms, 455
 Limb'd and full grown: out of the ground up rose
 As from his Laire the wild Beast where he wons
 In Forrest wild, in Thicket, Brake, or Den;
 Among the Trees in Pairs they rose, they walk'd:
 The Cattel in the Fields and Meddows green: 460
 Those rare and solitary, these in flocks
 Pasturing at once, and in broad Herds upsprung.
 The grassie Clods now Calv'd, now half appear'd
 The Tawny Lion, pawing to get free 464
 His hinder parts, then springs as broke from Bonds,
 And Rampant shakes his Brinded main; the Ounce,
 The Libbard, and the Tyger, as the Moale
 Rising, the crumbl'd Earth above them threw
 In Hillocks; the swift Stag from under ground
 Bore up his branching Head: scarce from his mould
 Behemoth biggest born of Earth upheav'd 471
 His vastness: Fleec'd the Flocks and bleating rose,
 As Plants: ambiguous between Sea and Land
 The River Horse and scaly Crocodile.
 At once came forth whatever creeps the ground, 475
 Insect or Worm: those wav'd their limber fans
 For wings, and smallest Lineaments exact
 In all the Liveries deck'd of Summers pride
 With spots of Gold and Purple, azure and green:

These as a line their long dimension drew,
 Streaking the ground with sinuous trace; not all
 Minims of Nature; some of Serpent kind
 Wondrous in length and corpulence involv'd
 Their Snaky foulds, and added wings. First creep
 The Parsimonious Emmet, provident
 Of future, in small room large heart enclos'd,
 Pattern of just equality perhaps
 Hereafter, join'd in her popular Tribes
 Of Commonalty: swarming next appear'd
 The Female Bee that feeds her Husband Drone
 Deliciously, and builds her waxen Cells
 With Hony stor'd: the rest are numberless,
 And thou their Natures know'st, and gave them names
 Needleless to thee repeated; nor unknown
 The Serpent fittl'st Beast of all the field,
 Of huge extent sometimes, with brazen Eyes
 And hairy Main terrific, though to thee
 Not noxious, but obedient at thy call.
 Now Heav'n in all her Glory shon, and rowl'd
 Her motions, as the great first-Movers hand 500
 First wheel'd their course; Earth in her rich attire
 Consummate lovely smil'd; Aire, Water, Earth,
 By Fowle, Fish, Beast, was flown, was swum, was walkt
 Frequent; and of the Sixth day yet remain'd;
 There wanted yet the Master work, the end 505
 Of all yet done; a Creature who not prone
 And Brute as other Creatures, but endu'd
 With Sanctity of Reason, might erect
 His Stature, and upright with Front serene

govern the rest, self-knowing, and from thence ; 10
 unanimous to correspond with Heav'n,
 and grateful to acknowledge whence his good
 descends, thither with heart and voice and eyes
 directed in Devotion, to adore
 and worship God supream, who made him chief ; 15
 Of all his works : therefore the Omnipotent
 Eternal Father (For where is not he
 present) thus to his Son audibly spake.

Let us make now Man in our image, Man
 in our similitude, and let them rule ; 20
 Over the Fish and Fowle of Sea and Aire,
 Beast of the Field, and over all the Earth,
 And every creeping thing that creeps the ground.
 This said, he form'd thee, *Adam*, thee O Man
 Dust of the ground, and in thy nostrils breath'd
 The breath of Life ; in his own Image he ; 26
 Created thee, in the Image of God
 Express, and thou becam'st a living Soul.
 Male he created thee, but thy consort
 Female for Race ; then blest'd Mankind, and said,
 Be fruitful, multiply, and fill the Earth, ; 31
 Subdue it, and throughout Dominion hold
 Over Fish of the Sea, and Fowle of the Aire,
 And every living thing that moves on the Earth.
 Where-ever thus created, for no place ; 35
 Is yet distinct by Name, thence, as thou know'st
 He brought thee into this delicious Grove,
 This Garden, planted with the Trees of God,
 Delectable both to behold and taste ;

And freely all their pleasant fruit for food
 Gave thee, all sorts are here that all th' Earth yields
 Variety without end; but of the Tree

Which tasted works knowledge of Good and Evil
 Thou may'st not; in the day thou eat'st, thoudy'st
 Death is the penalty impos'd, beware,

And govern well thy appetite, lest sin
 Surprise thee, and her black attendant Death.

Here finish'd he, and all that he had made
 View'd, and behold all was entirely good;

So Eev'n and Morn accomplish'd the Sixth day:

Yet not 'till the Creator from his work
 Desisting, though unwearied, up return'd.

Up to the Heav'n of Heav'ns his high abode,
 Thence to behold this new created World

Th' addition of his Empire, how it shew'd

In prospect from his Throne, how good, how fair

Answering his great Idea. Up he rode

Follow'd with acclamation and the sound

Symphonious of ten thousand Harps that tun'd

Angelic harmonies: the Earth, the Aire

Refounded, (thou remember'st, for thou heardst)

The Heav'ns and all the Constellations rang,

The Planets in their station list'ning stood,

While the bright Pomp ascended jubilant.

Open, ye everlasting Gates, they sung,

Open, ye Heav'ns, your living doors, let in

The great Creator from his work return'd

Magnificent, his Six days work, a World;

Open, and henceforth oft; for God will deign

To visit oft the dwellings of just Men
 Delighted, and with frequent intercourse
 Whither will send his winged Messengers
 On errands of supernal Grace. So sung
 The glorious Train ascending: He through Heav'n,
 That open'd wide her blazing Portals, led 575
 To God's Eternal house direct the way,
 A broad and ample roade, whose dust is Gold
 And pavement Stars, as Stars to thee appear,
 Seen in the Galaxie, that Milky way
 Which nightly as a circling Zone thou seest 580
 Under'd with Stars. And now on Earth the Seventh
 Evening arose in *Eden*, for the Sun
 Was set, and twilight from the East came on,
 Forerunning Night; when at the holy mount
 Of Heav'n's high-seated top, th' Imperial Throne
 Of Godhead, fixt for ever firm and sure, 586
 The Filial Power arriv'd, and sat him down
 With his great Father (for he also went
 Invisible, yet staid (such priviledge
 Hath Omnipresence) and the work ordain'd, 590
 Author and end of all things, and from work
 Now resting, bless'd and hallow'd the Sev'nth day,
 As resting on that day from all his work,
 But not in silence holy kept; the Harp
 Had work and rested not, the solemn Pipe 596
 And Dulcimer, all Organs of sweet stop,
 All sounds on Fret by String or Golden Wire
 Temper'd soft Tunings, intermixt with Voice
 Choral or Unison: of incense Clouds

Fuming from Golden Censers hid the Mount. 600
 Creation and the Six days acts they sung,
 Great are thy works, *Jehovah*, infinite
 Thy power; what thought can measure thee, or tongue
 Relate thee; greater now in thy return
 Than from the Giant Angels; thee that day 605
 Thy Thunders magnify'd; but to create
 Is greater than created to destroy.
 Who can impair thee, mighty King, or bound
 Thy Empire? easily the proud attempt
 Of Spirits apostat and their Counsels vain 610
 Thou hast repel'd, while impiously they thought
 Thee to diminish, and from thee withdraw
 The number of thy worshippers. Who seeks
 To lessen thee, against his purpose serves
 To manifest the more thy might: his evil 615
 Thou usest, and from thence creat'st more good.
 Witness this new-made World, another Heav'n
 From Heav'n Gate not far, founded in view
 On the clear *Hyaline*, the Glassie Sea;
 Of amplitude almost immense, with Stars 620
 Numerous, and every Star perhaps a World
 Of destin'd habitation; but thou know'st
 Their seasons: among these the seat of men,
 Earth with her nether Ocean circumfus'd,
 Their pleasant dwelling place. Thrice happy men, 625
 And sons of men, whom God hath thus advanc'd,
 Created in his Image, there to dwell
 And worship him, and in reward to rule
 Over his Works, on Earth, in Sea, or Aire,

multiply a Race of Worshippers 630
 and just: thrice happy if they know
 their happiness, and persevere upright.
 sung they, and the Emphyrean rung,
 in *Halleluiahs*: Thus was Sabbath kept.
 thy request think now fulfill'd, that ask'd 635
 first this World and face of things began,
 what before thy memorie was done
 in the beginning, that posterity
 learn'd by thee might know, if else thou seekst
 light, not surpassing human measure, say. 640

The End of the Seventh Book.



Paradise Lost.

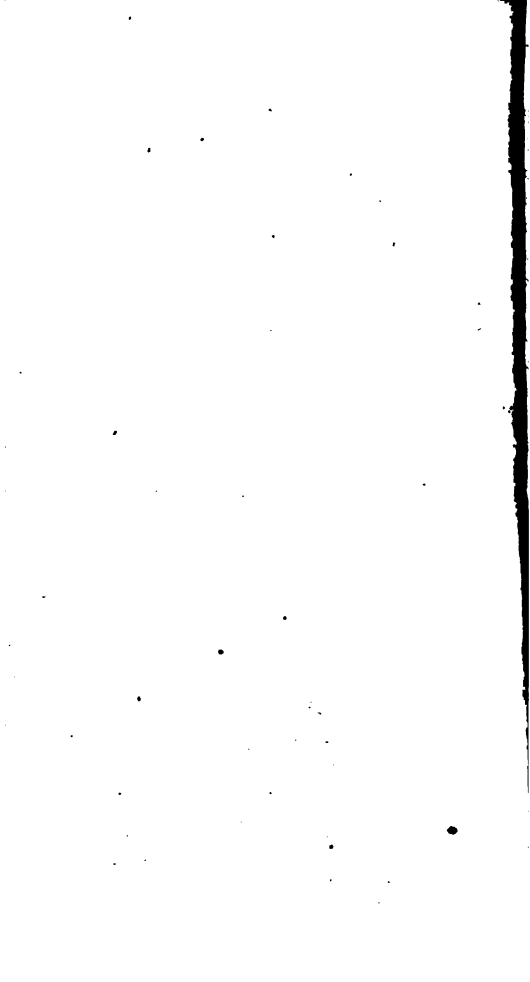
BOOK VIII.

The ARGUMENT.

Adam inquires concerning celestial Regions, is doubtfully answer'd, and exhorted to search rather things more worthy of knowledge : Adam assents, still desirous to detain Raphael, relates to him what he remember'd since his Creation, his talk with God concerning solitude and fit society, his first meeting and Nuptials with Eve, his discourse with the Angel thereupon ; who on his admonitions repeated departs.



Lib. VIII.



THE Angel ended, and in *Adam's* Ear
 So Charming left his voice, that he a while
 Thought him still speaking, still stood fixt to hear;
 Then as new wak'd thus gratefully reply'd.
 What thanks sufficient, or what recompence
 Equal have I to render thee, Divine
 Historian, who thus largely hast allay'd
 The thirst I had of knowledge, and vouchsaf'd
 This friendly condescension to relate
 Things else by me unsearchable, now heard
 With wonder, but delight, and, as is due,
 With glory attributed to the high
 Creator; something yet of doubt remains,
 Which only thy Solution can resolve.
 When I behold this goodly Frame, this World
 Of Heav'n and Earth consisting, and compute,
 Their magnitudes, this Earth a spot, a grain,
 An Atom, with the Firmament compar'd
 And all her number'd Stars, that seem to rowl
 Spaces incomprehensible (for such
 Their distance argues, and their swift return
 Diurnal) meerly to officiate light
 Round this opacous Earth, this punctual spot,
 One day and night; in all their vast survey
 Useless besides, reasoning I oft admire,
 How Nature wise and frugal could commit
 Such disproportions, with superfluous hand
 So many nobler Bodies to create,
 Greater for manifold to this one use,

The benefit: consider first, that Great 90
 Or Bright infers not Excellence: the Earth
 Though, in comparison of Heav'n, so small,
 Nor glistening, may of solid good contain
 More plenty than the Sun that barren shines,
 Whose virtue on it self works no effect, 95
 But in the fruitful Earth; there first receiv'd
 His beams, unactive else, their vigour find.
 Yet not to Earth are those bright Luminaries
 Officious, but to thee Earth's habitant.
 And for the Heav'ns wide Circuit, let it speak 100
 The Maker's high magnificence, who built
 So spacious, and his Line stretcht out so far;
 That Man may know he dwells not in his own;
 An Edifice too large for him to fill,
 Lodg'd in a small partition, and the rest 105
 Ordain'd for uses to his Lord best known.
 The swiftness of those Circles attribute,
 Though numberless, to his Omnipotence,
 That to corporeal substances could add
 Speed almost Spiritual; me thou thinkst not slow, 110
 Who since the Morning hour set out from Heav'n
 Where God resides, and e'er mid-day arriv'd
 In *Eden*, distance inexpressible
 By Numbers that have name. But this I urge,
 Admitting Motion in the Heav'ns, to shew 115
 Invalid that which thee to doubt it mov'd;
 Not that I so affirm, though so it seem
 To thee who hast thy dwelling here on Earth.
 God to remove his ways from human sense,

Book VIII. PARADISE LOST. 225

Mac'd Heav'n from Earth so far, that earthly sight,
If it presume, might err in things too high. 121
And no advantage gain. What if the Sun
Be Center to the World, and other Stars
By his attractive virtue and their own
Incited, dance about him various rounds? 125
Their wandring course now high, now low, then hid,
Progressive, retrograde, or standing still,
In six thou see'st, and what if sev'nth to these
The Planet Earth, so stedfast though she seem,
Insensibly three different Motions move? 130
Which else to several Spheres thou must ascribe,
Mov'd contrary with thwart obliquities,
Or save the Sun his labour, and that swift
Nocturnal and Diurnal rhomb suppos'd,
Invisible else above all Stars, the Wheel 135
Of Day and Night; which needs not thy belief,
If Earth industrious of her self fetch Day
Travelling East, and with her part averse
From the Suns beam meet Night, her other part
Still luminous by his ray. What if that light 140
Sent from her through the wide transpicious aire,
To the terrestrial Moon be as a Star
Enlightning her by Day, as she by Night
This Earth? reciprocal, if Land be there,
Fields and Inhabitants: Her spots thou see'st 145
As Clouds, and Clouds may rain, and Rain produce
Fruits in her soften'd Soil, for some to eat
Allotted there; and other Suns perhaps
With their attendant Moons thou wilt descry

Communicating Male and Female Light, 152
 Which two great Sexes animate the World,
 Stor'd in each Orb perhaps with some that live,
 For such vast room in Nature unpossess'd
 By living Soul, desert and desolate,
 Only to shine, yet scarce to contribute 155
 Each Orb a glimpse of Light, convey'd so far
 Down to this habitable, which returns
 Light back to them, is obvious to dispute.
 But whether thus these things, or whether not,
 Whether the Sun predominant in Heav'n 160
 Rise on the Earth, or Earth rise on the Sun,
 He from the East his flaming rode begin,
 Or She from West her silent course advance
 With inoffensive pace that spinning sleeps
 On her soft Axle, while she paces Eev'n, 165
 And bears thee soft with the smooth Air along,
 Sollicit not thy thoughts with matters hid,
 Leave them to God above, him serve and fear;
 Of other Creatures, as him pleases best,
 Where-ever plac'd, let him dispose : joy thou 170
 In what he gives to thee, this Paradise.
 And thy fair *Eve* ; Heav'n is for thee too high
 To know what passes there ; be lowly wise :
 Think only what concerns thee and thy being ;
 Dream not of other Worlds, what Creatures there
 Live, in what state, condition or degree, 176
 Contented that thus far hath been reveal'd
 Not of Earth only but of highest Heav'n.
 To whom thus *Adam* clear'd of doubt, reply'd,

How fully hast thou satisfy'd me, pure 180
 Intelligence of Heav'n, Angel serene,
 And freed from intricacies, taught to live,
 The easiest way, nor with perplexing thoughts
 To interrupt the sweet of Life, from which
 God hath bid dwell far off all anxious cares, 185
 And not molest us, unless we our selves
 Seek them with wandering thoughts, and notions vain.
 But apt the Mind or Fancy is to rove
 Uncheckt, and of her roving is no end;
 Till warn'd, or by experience taught, she learn, 190
 That not to know at large of things remote
 From use, obscure and subtle, but to know
 That which before us lies in daily life,
 Is the prime Wisdom, what is more, is fume,
 Or emptiness, or fond impertinence, 195
 And renders us in things that most concern
 Unpractis'd, unprepar'd, and still to seek.
 Therefore from this high pitch let us descend
 A lower flight, and speak of things at hand
 Useful, whence haply mention may arise, 200
 Of something not unseasonable to ask
 By sufferance, and thy wonted favour deign'd.
 Thee I have heard relating what was done
 E'er my remembrance: now hear me relate
 My Story, which perhaps thou hast not heard; 205
 And Day is yet not spent, till then thou seest
 How subtly to detain thee I devise,
 Inviting thee to hear while I relate,
 Fond, were it not in hope of thy reply :

For while I sit with thee, I seem in Heav'n, 218
 And sweeter thy discourse is to my ear
 Than Fruits of Palm-tree pleasantest to thirst
 And hunger both, from labour, at the hour
 Of sweet repast; they satiate, and soon fill,
 Tho' pleasant, but thy words with Grace Divine 219
 Imbu'd, bring to their sweetness no satiety.

To whom thus *Raphael* answer'd heav'nly meek.
 Nor are thy lips ungraceful, Sire of men,
 Nor tongue ineloquent; for God on thee
 Abundantly his gifts hath also pour'd 220
 Inward and outward both, his image fair:
 Speaking or mute all comeliness and grace
 Attends thee, and each word, each motion forms,
 Nor less think we in Heav'n of thee on Earth
 Than of our fellow servant, and inquire 225
 Gladly into the ways of God and Man:
 For God we see hath honour'd thee, and set
 On Man his Equal Love: say therefore on;
 For I that Day was absent, as beset,
 Bound on a voyage uncouth and obscure, 230
 Far on excursion toward the Gates of Hell;
 Squar'd in full Legion (such command we had)
 To see that none thence issu'd forth a spy,
 Or enemy, while God was in his work,
 Lest he incens'd at such eruption bold, 235
 Destruction with Creation might have mixt.
 Not that they durst without his leave attempt,
 But us he sends upon his high behests
 For state, as Sov'reign King, and to ensure

For prompt obedience. Fast we found, fast shut
 The dismal Gates, and barricado'd strong; 241
 But long e'er our approaching heard within
 Noise, other than the sound of Dance or Song,
 Torment, and loud lament, and furious rage.
 Glad we return'd up to the coasts of Light 245
 E'er Sabbath Eev'ning: so we had in charge.
 But thy relation now; for I attend,
 Pleas'd with thy words no less than thou with mine.
 So spake the Godlike Power, and thus our Sire.
 For Man to tell how human Life began 250
 Is hard; for who himself beginning knew?
 Desire with thee still longer to converse
 Induc'd me. As new wak'd from soundest sleep
 Soft on the flowry herb I found me laid
 In Balmy Sweat, which with his Beams the Sun 255
 Soon dry'd, and on the reaking moisture fed.
 Strait toward Heav'n my wondring Eyes I turn'd,
 And gaz'd a while the ample Sky, till rais'd
 By quick instinctive motion up I sprung,
 As thitherward endeavouring, and upright 260
 Stood on my feet; about me round I saw
 Hill, Dale, and shady Woods, and sunny Plains,
 And liquid Lapse of murmuring Streams; by these
 Creatures that liv'd, and mov'd, and walk'd, or flew,
 Birds on the branches warbling; all things smil'd, 265
 With fragrance and with joy my heart o'erflow'd.
 My self I then perus'd, and Limb by Limb
 Survey'd, and sometimes went, and sometimes ran
 With supple joints and lively vigour led:

But who I was, or where, or from what cause, 27
 Knew not; to speak I try'd, and forthwith spake,
 My Tongue obey'd and readily could name
 What e'er I saw. Thou Sun, said I, fair Light,
 And thou enlighten'd Earth, so fresh and gay,
 Ye Hills, and Dales, ye Rivers, Woods, and Plains
 And ye that live and move, fair Creatures, tell, 27
 Tell, if ye saw, how came I thus, how here?
 Not of my self; by some great Maker then,
 In goodness and in power preëminent;
 Tell me, how may I know him, how adore, 28
 From whom I have that thus I move and live,
 And feel that I am happier than I know.
 While thus I call'd, and stray'd I knew not whither
 From where I first drew Aire, and first beheld
 This happy Light, when answer none return'd, 28
 On a green shady Bank profuse of Flours
 Pensive I sate me down; there gentle sleep
 First found me, and with soft oppression seis'd
 My droused sense, untroubl'd, though I thought
 I then was passing to my former state 29
 Insensible, and forthwith to dissolve:
 When suddenly stood at my Head a dream,
 Whose inward apparition gently mov'd
 My fancy to believe I yet had being, 29
 And liv'd: One came, methought, of shape Divine
 And said, thy Mansion wants thee, *Adam*, rise
 First Man, of Men innumerable ordain'd
 First Father, call'd by thee I come thy Guide
 To the Garden of bliss, thy seat prepar'd.

saying, by the hand he took me rais'd, 300
 And over Fields and Waters, as in Aire
 smooth sliding without step, last led me up
 A woody Mountain; whose high top was plain,
 A Circuit wide, enclos'd, with goodliest Trees 304
 planted, with Walks, and Bowers, that what I saw
 Of Earth before scarce pleasant seem'd. Each Tree
 load'n with fairest Fruit that hung to the Eye
 Tempting, stirr'd in me sudden appetite
 To pluck and eat; whereat I wak'd and found
 before mine Eyes all real, as the dream 310
 Had lively shadow'd: Here had new begun
 My wandring, had not he who was my Guide
 Up hither, from among the Trees appear'd
 Presence Divine. Rejoycing, but with awe
 In adoration at his feet I fell 315
 Submits: he rear'd me, and whom thou soughtst I am,
 Said mildly, Author of all this thou seest
 Above, or round about thee or beneath.
 This Paradise I give thee, count it thine
 To Till and keep, and of the Fruit to eat: 320
 Of every Tree that in the Garden grows
 Eat freely with glad heart; fear here no dearth:
 But of the Tree whose operation brings
 Knowledge of good and ill, which I have set
 The Pledge of thy Obedience and thy Faith, 325
 Amid the Garden by the Tree of Life,
 Remember what I warn thee, shun to taste
 And shun the bitter consequence, for know,
 The day thou eat'st thereof, my sole command.

Transgrest, inevitably thou shalt die; 32
 From that day mortal, and this happy State
 Shalt lose, expell'd from hence into a World
 Of woe and sorrow. Sternly he pronounc'd
 The rigid interdiction, which resounds
 Yet dreadful in mine ear, though in my choice 33
 Not to incur; but soon his clear aspect
 Return'd and gracious purpose thus renew'd.
 Not only these fair bounds, but all the Earth
 To thee and to thy Race I give; as Lords 34
 Possess it, and all things that therein live,
 Or live in Sea, or Aire, Beast, Fish, and Fowle.
 In sign whereof each Bird and Beast behold
 After their kinds; I bring them to receive
 From thee their Names, and pay thee fealty
 With low subjection; understand the same 34½
 Of Fish within their watry residence,
 Not hither summon'd, since they cannot change
 Their Element to draw the thinner Aire.
 As thus he spake, each Bird and Beast behold
 Approaching two and two, These cowering low 35
 With blandishment, each Bird stoop'd on his wing.
 I nam'd them, as they pass'd, and understood
 Their Nature, with such knowledge God endu'd
 My sudden apprehension: but in these
 I found not what me thought I wanted still; 35½
 And to the Heav'nly vision thus presum'd.

O by what Name, for thou above all these,
 Above mankind, or aught than mankind higher,
 Surpassest far my naming, how may I

More thee, Author of this Universe, 360
 And all this good to man, for whose well being
 So amply, and with hands so liberal
 Thou hast provided all things: but with me
 See not who partakes. In solitude
 What happiness, who can enjoy alone, 365
 Or all enjoying, what contentment find?

Thus I presumptuous; and the vision bright,
 As with a smile more brighten'd, thus reply'd.
 What call'st thou solitude, is not the Earth
 With various living creatures, and the Aire 370
 Replenish'd, and all these at thy command
 To come and play before thee, know'st thou not
 Their language and their ways, they also know,
 And reason not contemptibly; with these
 And pastime, and bear rule; thy Realm is large. 375
 To spake the Universal Lord, and seem'd
 To ordering. I with leave of speech implor'd,
 And humble deprecation thus reply'd.

Let not my words offend thee, Heav'nly Power,
 My Maker, be propitious while I speak. 380
 Hast thou not made me here thy substitute,
 And these inferiour far beneath me set?
 Among unequals what society
 Can sort, what harmony or true delight?
 Which must be mutual, in proportion due 385
 Giv'n and receiv'd; but in disparity
 The one intense, the other still remiss
 Cannot well suit with either, but soon prove
 Tedious alike: Of fellowship I speak

Such as I seek, fit to participate

All rational delight, wherein the brute

Cannot be human comfort; they rejoyce

Each with their kind, Lion with Lioness;

So fitly them in pairs thou hast combin'd;

Much less can Bird with Beast, or Fish with Fowl

So well converse, nor with the Ox the Ape;

Worse than can Man with Beast, and least of all

Whereto th' Almighty answer'd, not displeas'd.

A nice and futtle happiness I see

Thou to thy self propos'st, in the choice

Of thy Associates, *Adam*, and wilt taste

No pleasure, though in pleasure, solitary.

What thinkest thou then of me, and this my State

Seem I to thee sufficiently possess

Of happiness, or not? who am alone

From all Eternity, for none I know

Second to me or like, equal much less.

How have I then with whom to hold converse

Save with the Creatures which I made, and those

To me inferiour, infinite descents

Beneath what other Creatures are to thee?

He ceas'd, I lowly answer'd. To attain

The heighth and depth of thy Eternal ways

All human thoughts come short, Supream of things;

Thou in thy self art perfect, and in thee

Is no deficiency found; not so is Man

But in degree, the cause of his desire

By conversation with his like to help,

Or solace his defects. No need that thou

Shouldst propagate, already infinite ; 420
 And through all numbers absolute, though One;
 But Man by number is to manifest
 His single imperfection, and beget
 Like of his like, his Image multiply'd,
 In unity defective, which requires 425
 Collateral love, and dearest amity.
 Thou in thy secrecie although alone,
 Best with thy self accompany'd, seek'st not
 Social communication, yet so pleas'd,
 Canst raise thy Creature to what height thou wilt
 Of Union or Communion, deify'd ; 430
 And by conversing cannot these erect
 From prone, nor in their ways complacence find.
 Thus I embolden'd spake, and freedom us'd
 Permissive; and acceptance found, which gain'd 435
 This answer from the gracious voice Divine.
 Thus far to say thee, Adam, I was pleas'd,
 And find thee knowing not of Beasts alone,
 Which thou hast rightly nam'd, but of thy self,
 Expressing well the spirit within thee free, 440
 My Image, not imparted to the Brute,
 Whose fellowship therefore unmeet for thee
 Good reason was thou freely shouldst dislike,
 And be so minded still ; I, e'er thou spak'st,
 Knew it not good for Man to be alone, 445
 And no such company as then thou saw'st
 Intended thee, for trial only brought,
 To see how thou couldst judge of fit and meet :
 What next I bring shall please thee, be assur'd,

Thy likeness, thy fit help, thy other self,
Thy wish exactly to thy hearts desire.

He ended, or I heard no more, for now
My earthly by his Heav'nly overpower'd,
Which it had long stood under, strein'd to the he
In that celestial Colloquy sublime,
As with an object that excels the sense,
Dazl'd and spent, sunk down, and sought rep
Of sleep, which instantly fell on me, call'd
By Nature as in aid, and clos'd mine Eyes.
Mine eyes he clos'd, but open left the Cell
Of Fancy my internal sight, by which
Abstract as in a transe methought I saw,
Though sleeping, where I lay, and saw the sh
Still glorious before whom awake I stood;
Who stooping open'd my left side, and took
From thence a Rib, with cordial spirits warm,
And Life-blood streaming fresh; wide was the w
But suddenly with flesh fill'd up and heal'd:
The Rib he form'd and fashion'd with his hands
Under his forming hands a Creature grew,
Manlike, but different Sex, so lovely fair,
That what seem'd fair in all the World, seem'd ne
Mean, or in her summ'd up, in her contain'd
And in her looks, which from that time infus'd
Sweetness into my heart, unfelt before, 47
And into all things from her Aire inspir'd
The spirit of love and amorous delight.
She disappear'd, and left me dark, I wak'd
To find her, or for ever to deplore

II. PARADISE LOST. 237

and other pleasures to abjure : 480

of hope, behold her, not far off,
saw her in my dream, adorn'd
at all Earth or Heaven could bestow
her amiable: On she came,

at Heav'nly Maker, though unseen, 485
ed by his voice, nor uninform'd

all Sanctity and marriage Rites:
as in all her steps, Heav'n in her Eye,
gesture dignity and love.

'd could not forbear aloud. 490

urn hath made amends; thou hast fulfill'd
ds, Creator bounteous and benign,

'all things fair, but fairest this

by gifts, nor envious. I now see

f my Bone, Flesh of my Flesh, my Self 495

me; Woman is her Name, of Man

ed; for this cause he shall forgo

and Mother, and to his Wife adhere;

ey shall be one Flesh, one Heart, one Soul.

heard me thus, and tho' divinely brought, 500

let Innocence and Virgin Modesty,

her virtue and the conscience of her worth,

That would be woo'd, and not unsought be won,

Not obvious, not obtrusive, but retir'd,

The more desirable, or to say all, 505

Nature her self, though pure of sinful thought,

Wrought in her so, that seeing me, she turn'd;

I follow'd her, she what was Honour knew,

And with obsequious Majesty approv'd

My pleas'd reason. To the Nuptial Bowre ; 10
 I led her blushing like the Morn: all Heav'n,
 And happy Constellations on that hour
 Shed their selectest influence; the Earth
 Gave sign of gratulation, and each Hill;
 Joyous the Birds; fresh Gales and gentle Aires ; 15
 Whisper'd it to the Woods, and from their wings
 Flung Rose, flung Odours from the spicy Shrub,
 Disporting, till the amorous Bird of Night
 Sung Spousal, and bid haste the Eev'ning Star
 On his Hill top, to light the bridal Lamp. ; 20
 Thus have I told thee all my State, and brought
 My Story to the sum of earthly bliss
 Which I enjoy, and must confess to find
 In all things else delight indeed, but such
 As us'd or not, works in the mind no change, ; 25
 Nor vehement desire, these delicacies
 I mean of Taste, Sight, Smell, Herbs, Fruits, and Flours,
 Walks, and the melody of Birds; but here
 Far otherwise, transported I behold,
 Transported touch; her passion first I felt, ; 30
 Commotion strange, in all enjoyments else
 Superiour and unmov'd, here only weak
 Against the charm of Beauties powerful glance.
 Or Nature fail'd in me, and left some part
 Not proof enough such Object to sustain, ; 35
 Or from my side subducting, took perhaps
 More than enough; at least on her bestow'd
 Too much of Ornament, in outward shew
 Elaborate, of inward less exact.

For well I understand in the prime end 540
 Of Nature her th'inferiour, in the mind
 And inward Faculties, which most excel,
 An outward also her resembling less
 His Image who made both, and less expressing
 The character of that Dominion giv'n 545
 O'er other Creatures; yet when I approach
 Her loveliness, so absolute she seems
 And in her self compleat, so well to know
 Her own, that what she wills to do or say,
 Seems wisest, virtuousest, discreetest, best; 550
 All higher knowledge in her presence falls
 Degraded, Wisdom in discourse with her
 Looses discount'nanc'd, and like folly shews;
 Authority and Reason on her wait,
 As one intended first, not after made 555
 Occasionally; and to consummare all,
 Greatness of mind and nobleness their seat
 Build in her loveliest, and create an awe
 About her, as a guard Angelic plac'd.
 To whom the Angel with contracted brow. 560
 Accuse not Nature, she hath done her part;
 Do thou but thine, and be not diffident
 Of Wisdom, she deserts thee not, if thou
 Dismiss not her, when most thou needst her nigh,
 By attributing overmuch to things 565
 Less excellent, as thou thy self perceiv'st.
 For what admir'st thou, what transports thee so,
 An outside? fair no doubt, and worthy well
 Thy cherishing, thy honouring, and thy love,

Not thy subjection: weigh with her thy self;
 Then value: Oft-times nothing profits more
 Than self esteem, grounded on just and right
 Well manag'd; of that skill the more thou know'st
 The more she will acknowledge thee her Head,
 And to realities yield all her Shows:
 Made so adorn for thy delight the more,
 So awful, that with honour thou may'st love
 Thy mate, who sees when thou art seen least will
 But if the sense of touch whereby mankind
 Is propagated seem such dear delight
 Beyond all other, think the same vouchsaf'd
 To Cattel and each Beast; which would not be
 To them made common and divulg'd, if aught
 Therein enjoy'd were worthy to subdue
 The Soul of Man, or passion in him move.
 What higher in her society thou findest
 Attractive, human, rational, love still;
 In loving thou dost well, in passion not,
 Wherein true Love consists not; love refines
 The thoughts, and heart enlarges, hath his seat
 In Reason, and is judicious, is the scale
 By which to heav'nly Love thou may'st ascend,
 Not sunk in carnal pleasure, for which cause
 Among the Beasts no Mate for thee was found.

To whom thus half abash'd *Adam* reply'd. 596
 Neither her out-side form'd so fair, nor aught
 In procreation common to all kinds
 (Though higher of the genial Bed by far,
 And with mysterious reverence I deem)

So much delights me as those graceful acts, 600
 Those thousand decencies that daily flow
 From all her words and actions mixt with Love
 And sweet compliance, which declare unfeign'd
 Union of Mind, or in us both one Soul;
 Harmony to behold in wedded pair 605
 More grateful than harmonious sound to the ear.
 Yet these subject not; I to thee disclose
 What inward thence I feel, not therefore foil'd,
 Who meet with various objects, from the sense
 Variously representing; yet still free 610
 Approve the best, and follow what I approve.
 To love thou blam'st me not, for love thou say'st
 Leads up to Heav'n, is both the way and guide;
 Bear with me then, if lawful what I ask; 614
 Love not the heav'nly Spirits, and how their Love
 Express they, by looks only, or do they mix
 Irradiance, virtual or immediate touch?

To whom the Angel with a smile that glow'd
 Celestial rose red, Love's proper hue,
 Answer'd. Let it suffice thee that thou know'st 620
 Us happy, and without Love no happiness.
 Whatever pure thou in thy body enjoy'st
 (And pure thou wert created) we enjoy
 In eminence, and obstacle find none
 Of membrane, joyn't, or limb, exclusive bars; 625
 Easier than Aire with Aire, if Spirits embrace,
 Total they mix, Union of Pure with Pure
 Desiring; nor restrain'd conveyance need
 As Flesh to mix with Flesh, or Soul with Soul.

But I can now no more; the parting Sun 638
Beyond the Earth's green Cape and verdant Isles
Hesperian sets, my Signal to depart.

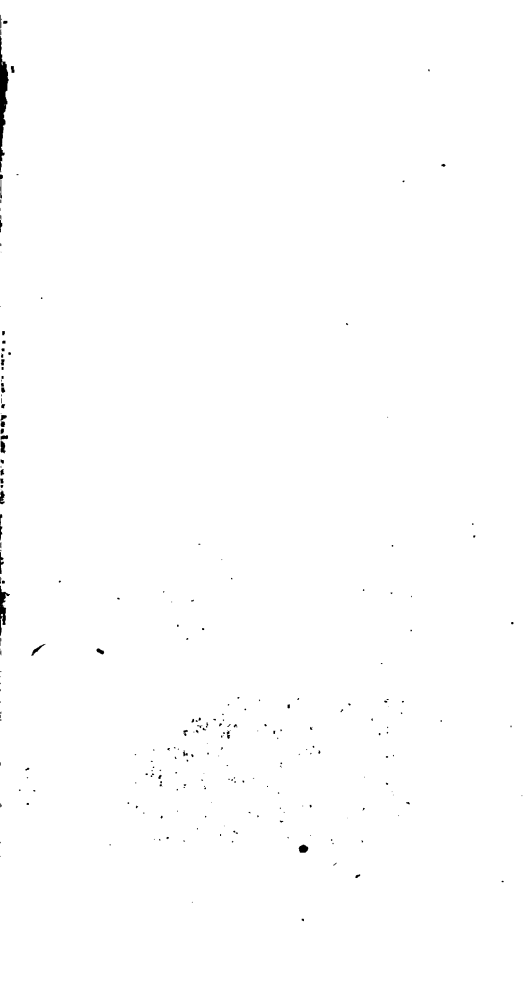
Be strong, live happy, and love, but first of all
Him who to love is to obey, and keep
His great command; take heed lest *Passion* sway 639
Thy Judgment to do ought, which else free Will
Would not admit; thine and of all thy Sons
The weal or woe in thee is plac'd; beware.
I in thy persevering shall rejoyce,

And all the Blest: stand fast; to stand or fall 640
Free in thine own Arbitrement it lies.
Perfect within, no outward aid require;
And all temptation to transgress repel.

So saying, he arose; whom *Adam* thus
Follow'd with benediction. Since to part, 641
Go heav'nly Guest, *Ethereal* Messenger,
Sent from whose sov'reign goodness I adore.
Gentle to me and affable hath been
Thy condescension, and shall be honour'd ever
With grateful *Memorie*: thou to mankind 642
Be good and friendly still, and oft return.

So parted they, the Angel up to Heav'n
From the thick shade, and *Adam* to his Bowre,

The End of the Eighth Book.







Paradise Lost.

BOOK IX.

The ARGUMENT.

Satan having compass'd the Earth, with meditated guile returns as a mist by Night into Paradise, enters into the Serpent sleeping. Adam and Eve in the Morning go forth to their labours, which Eve proposes to divide in several places, each labouring apart: Adam consents not, alledging the danger, lest that Enemy, of whom they were forewarn'd, should attempt her found alone: Eve loath to be thought not circumspect or firm enough, urges her going apart, the rather desirous to make tryal of her strength; Adam at last yields: The Serpent finds her alone; his subtle approach, first gazing, then speaking, with much flattery ex-

tolling Eve above all other Creatures. Eve wondring to hear the Serpent speak, asks how he attain'd to human speech, and such understanding not 'till now; the Serpent answers, that by tasting of a certain Tree in the Garden he attain'd both to Speech and Reason, 'till then void of both: Eve requires him to bring her to that Tree, and finds it to be the Tree of Knowledge forbidden: The Serpent now grown bolder, with many wiles and arguments induces her at length to eat; she pleas'd with the taste deliberates a while whether to impart thereof to Adam or not, at last brings him of the Fruit, relates what persuaded her to eat thereof: Adam at first amaz'd, but perceiving her lost, resolves through vehemence of love to perish with her; and extenuating the trespass eats also of the Fruit: The Effects thereof in them both; they seek to cover their nakedness; then fall to variance and accusation of one another.

NO more of talk where God or Angel Guest
 With Man, as with his Friend, familiar us'd
 To sit indulgent, and with him partake
 Rural repast, permitting him the while
 Venial discourse unblam'd : I now must change
 Those Notes to Tragic; foul distrust, and breach
 Difloyal on the part of Man, revolt,
 And disobedience: On the part of Heav'n
 Now alienated, distance and distaste,
 Anger and just rebuke, and judgement giv'n,
 That brought into this World a world of woe,
 Sin and her shadow Death, and Misery
 Death's Harbinger: Sad task, yet argument
 Not less but more Heroic than the wrath
 Of stern *Achilles* on his Foe pursu'd
 Thrice Fugitive about *Troy* Wall; or rage
 Of *Turnus* for *Lavinia* disespous'd,
 Or *Neptune's* ire or *Juno's*, that so long
 Perplex'd the *Greek* and *Cytherea's* Son;
 If answerable style I can obtain
 Of my Celestial Patroness, who deigns
 Her nightly visitation unimplor'd,
 And dictates to me slumbring, or inspires
 Easie my unpremeditated Verse:
 Since first this Subject for Heroic Song
 Pleas'd me long chusing, and beginning late;
 Not sedulous by Nature to indite
 Wars, hitherto the only Argument
 Heroic deem'd, chief mast'ry to dissect

With long and tedious havoc fabl'd Knights 30
 In Battels feign'd; the better fortitude
 Of Patience and Heroic Martyrdom
 Unsung; or to describe Races and Games,
 Of tilting Furniture, emblazon'd Shields,
 Impresses quaint, Caparisons and Steeds; 35
 Bases and tinsel Trappings, gorgeous Knights
 At Joust and Torneament; then marshal'd Feast
 Serv'd up in Hall with Sewers, and Senechals;
 The skill of Artifice or Office mean,
 Not that which justly gives Heroic name 40
 To Person or to Poem. Me of these
 Not skill'd nor studious, higher Argument
 Remains, sufficient of it self to raise
 That name, unless an age too late, or cold
 Climate, or Years damp my intended wing 45
 Depress, and much they may, if all be mine,
 Not Hers who brings it nightly to my Ear.

The Sun was sunk, and after him the Star
 Of *Hesperus*, whose Office is to bring
 Twilight upon the Earth, short Arbitrer 50
 'Twixt Day and Night, and now from end to end
 Night's Hemisphere had veil'd the Horizon round:
 When *Satan* who late fled before the threats
 Of *Gabriel* out of *Eden*, now improv'd
 In meditated fraud and malice, bent 55
 On man's destruction, maugre what might hap
 Of heavier on himself, fearless return'd.
 By Night he fled, and at Midnight return'd
 From compassing the Earth, cautious of day,

Since *Uriel* Regent of the Sun descry'd 65
 His entrance, and forewarn'd the Cherubim,
 That kept their watch; thence full of anguish driv'n,
 The space of seven continu'd Nights he rode
 With darkness, thrice the Equinoctial Line
 He circl'd, four times cross'd the Car of Night 65
 From Pole to Pole, traversing each Colure;
 On the eighth return'd, and on the Coast averse
 From entrance or Cherubic Watch, by stealth
 Found unsuspected way. There was a place, 69
 Now not, tho' Sin, not Time, first wrought the change,
 Where *Tigris* at the foot of Paradise
 Into a Gulf shot under ground, till part
 Rose up a Fountain by the Tree of Life;
 In with the River sunk, and with it rose
 Satan involv'd in rising Mist, then sought 75
 Where to lye hid; Sea he had searcht and Land
 From *Eden* over *Pontus*, and the Poole
Maotis, up beyond the River *Ob*;
 Downward as far Antarctic; and in length
 West from *Orontes* to the Ocean barr'd 80
 At *Darien*, thence to the Land where flows
Ganges and *Indus*: thus the Orb he roam'd
 With narrow search; and with inspection deep
 Consider'd every Creature, which of all
 Most opportune might serve his Wiles, and found
 The Serpent fittest Beast of all the Field. 86
 Him after long debate, irresolute
 Of thoughts revolv'd, his final sentence chose
 Fit Vessel, fittest Imp of fraud, in whom

To enter, and his dark suggestions hide 90
 From sharpest sight: for in the wily Snake,
 Whatever sleights none would suspicious mark,
 As from his wit and native suttlety
 Proceeding, which in other Beasts observ'd
 Doubt might beget of Diabolic pow'r 95
 Active within beyond the sense of brute.
 Thus he resolv'd, but first from inward grief
 His bursting passion into plaints thus pour'd:

O Earth, how like to Heav'n, if not prefer'd
 More justly, Seat worthier of Gods, as built 100
 With second thoughts, reforming what was old!
 For what God after better worse would build?
 Terrestrial Heav'n, danc'd round by other Heav'ns
 That shine, yet bear their bright officious Lamps,
 Light above Light, for thee alone, as seems, 105
 In thee concentrating all their precious beams
 Of sacred influence: As God in Heav'n
 Is Center, yet extends to all, so thou
 Centring receiv'st from all those Orbs; in thee,
 Not in themselves, all their known virtue appears
 Productive in Herb, Plant, and nobler birth 110
 Of Creatures animate with gradual life
 Of Growth, Sense, Reason, all summ'd up in Man.
 With what delight could I have walkt thee round,
 If I could joy in aught, sweet interchange 115
 Of Hill, and Valley, Rivers, Woods and Plains,
 Now Land, now Sea, and Shores with Forrest crown'd,
 Rocks, Dens, and Caves; but I in none of these
 Find place or refuge; and the more I see

Pleasures about me, so much more I feel 120
 Torment within me, as from the hateful siege
 Of contraries; all good to me becomes
 Bane, and in Heav'n much worse would be my state.
 But neither here seek I, no nor in Heav'n
 To dwell, unless by mastering Heav'n's Supream; 125
 Nor hope to be my self less miserable
 By what I seek, but others to make such
 As I, though thereby worse to me redound:
 For only in destroying I find ease
 To my relentless thoughts; and him destroy'd, 130
 Or won to what may work his utter loss,
 For whom all this was made, all this will soon
 Follow, as to him linkt in weal or woe,
 In woe then; that destruction wide may range:
 To me shall be the glory sole among 135
 The infernal Powers, in one day to have marr'd
 What he Almighty styl'd, six Nights and Days
 Continu'd making, and who knows how long
 Before had been contriving, though perhaps
 Not longer than since I in one Night freed 140
 From servitude inglorious well nigh half
 Th' Angelic Name, and thinner left the throng
 Of his adorers: he to be aveng'd,
 And to repaire his numbers thus impair'd,
 Whether such virtue spent of old now fail'd 145
 More Angels to Create, if they at least
 Are his Created, or to spite us more,
 Determin'd to advance into our room
 A Creature form'd of Earth, and him endow,

Exalted from so base original, 150
 With Heav'nly spoils, our spoils: What he decreed
 He effected; Man he made, and for him built
 Magnificent this World, and Earth his seat,
 Him Lord pronounc'd, and, O indignity!
 Subjected to his service Angel wings, 155
 And flaming Ministers to watch and tend
 Their earthy Charge: Of these the vigilance
 I dread, and to elude, thus wrapt in mist
 Of midnight vapor glide obscure, and pry
 In every Bush and Brake, where hap may find 160
 The Serpent sleeping, in whose mazy foulds
 To hide me, and the dark intent I bring.
 O foul descent! that I who erst contended
 With Gods to sit the highest, am now constrain'd
 Into a Beast, and mixt with bestial slime, 165
 This essence to incarnate and imbrute,
 That to the height of Deity aspir'd;
 But what will not Ambition and Revenge
 Descend to? who aspires must down as low
 As high he soar'd, obnoxious first or last 170
 To basest things. Revenge, at first though sweet,
 Bitter e'er long back on it self recoiles;
 Let it; I reck not, so it light well aim'd,
 Since higher I fall short, on him who next
 Provokes my envy, this new Favourite 175
 Of Heav'n, this Man of Clay; Son of despite,
 Whom us the more to spite, his Maker rais'd
 From dust: spite then with spite is best repaid.
 So saying, through each Thicket Danck or Dry,

Book IX. PARADISE LOST. 251

Like a black mist low creeping, he held on 180
His midnight search, where soonest he might find
The Serpent: him fast sleeping soon he found
In Labyrinth of many a round self-rowl'd,
His head the midst, well stor'd with suttile wiles:
Not yet in horrid Shade or dismal Den, 185
Nor nocent yet, but on the grassie Herb
Fearless unfeard he slept: in at his Mouth
The Devil enter'd, and his brutal sense,
In heart or head, possessing soon inspir'd
With act intelligential; but his sleep 190
Disturb'd not, waiting close the approach of Morn.
Now when as sacred Light began to dawn
In *Eden* on the humid Flours, that breath'd
Their morning incense, when all things that breath,
From th' Earth's great Altar send up silent praise 195
To the Creator, and his Nostrils fill
With grateful Smell, forth came the human pair
And join'd their vocal Worship to the Quire
Of Creatures wanting voice, that done, partake
The season, prime for sweetest Scents and Aires: 200
Then commune how that day they best may ply
Their growing work: for much their work outgrew
The hands dispatch of two Gardning so wide.
And *Eve* first to her Husband thus began.

Adam, well may we labour still to dress 205
This Garden, still to tend Plant, Herb and Flour,
Our pleasant task enjoyn'd, but till more hands
Aid us, the work under our labour grows,
Luxurious by restraint; what we by day

Lop overgrown, or prune, or prop, or bind, 210
 One night or two with wanton growth derides
 Tending to wilde. Thou therefore now advise
 Or heare what to my mind first thoughts present,
 Let us divide our labours, thou where choice
 Leads thee, or where most needs, whether to winde
 The Woodbine round his Arbour, or direct 215
 The clasping Ivy where to climb, while I
 In yonder Spring of Roses intermixt
 With Myrtle, find what to redress till Noon:
 For while so near each other thus all day 220
 Our task we chuse, what wonder if so near
 Looks intervene and smiles, or object new
 Casual discourse draw on, which intermits
 Our days work brought to little, though begun
 Early, and th' hour of Supper comes unearn'd. 225

To whom mild answer *Adam* thus return'd.
 Sole *Eve*, Associate sole, to me beyond
 Compare above all living Creatures dear,
 Well hast thou motion'd, well thy thoughts imploy'd
 How we might best fulfil the work which here 230
 God hath assign'd us, nor of me shalt pass
 Unprais'd: for nothing lovelier can be found
 In Woman, than to study household good,
 And good works in her Husband to promote.
 Yet not so strictly hath our Lord impos'd 235
 Labour, as to debar us when we need
 Refreshment, whether food, or talk between,
 Food of the mind, or this sweet intercourse
 Of looks and smiles, for smiles from Reason flow,

No brute deny'd, and are of Love the food, 240
 Love not the lowest end of human life.
 For not to inkfome toil, but to delight
 He made us, and delight to Reason joyn'd.
 The paths and Bowers doubt not but our joynt hands
 Will keep from Wilderness with ease, as wide 245
 As we need walk, till younger hands e'er long
 Assist us: But if much converse perhaps
 Thee satiate, to short absence I could yield.
 For solitude sometimes is best society,
 And short retirement urges sweet return. 250
 But other doubt posselles me, lest harm
 Befal thee sever'd from me; for thou knowst
 What hath been warn'd us, what malicious Foe
 Envyng our happiness, and of his own
 Despairing, seeks to work us woe and shame 255
 By sly assault; and somewhere nigh at hand
 Watches, no doubt, with greedy hope to find
 His wish and best advantage, us asunder,
 Hopeless to circumvent us joyn'd, where each
 To other speedy aid might lend at need; 260
 Whether his first design be to withdraw
 Our fealty from God, or to disturb
 Conjugal Love, than which perhaps no bliss
 Enjoy'd by us excites his envy more;
 Or this, or worse, leave not the faithful side 265
 That gave thee being, still shades thee and protects.
 The Wife, where danger or dishonour lurks,
 Safest and seemliest by her Husband stays,
 Who guards her, or with her the worst endures.

To whom the Virgin Majesty of *Eve*, 270
 As one who loves, and some unkindness meets,
 With sweet austere composure thus reply'd.

Off-spring of Heav'n and Earth, and all Earths Lord,
 That such an Enemy we have, who seeks
 Our ruin, both by thee inform'd I learn, 275
 And from the parting Angel over-heard
 As in a shady nook I stood behind,
 Just then return'd at shut of Evening Flours.
 But that thou shouldst my firmness therefore doubt
 To God or thee, because we have a foe 280
 May tempt it, I expected not to hear.
 His violence thou fearst not, being such
 As we, not capable of death or pain,
 Can either not receive, or can repel.
 His fraud is then thy fear, which plain infers 285
 Thy equal fear that my firm Faith and Love
 Can by his fraud be shak'n or seduc'd;
 Thoughts, which how found they harbour in thy breast
Adam, mishtought of her to thee so dear?

To whom with healing words *Adam* reply'd. 290
 Daughter of God and Man, immortal *Eve*,
 For such thou art, from sin and blame entire:
 Not diffident of thee do I dissuade
 Thy absence from my sight, but to avoid
 Th' attempt it self, intended by our Foe. 295
 For he who tempts, though in vain, at least asperes
 The tempted with dishonour foul, suppos'd
 Not incorruptible of Faith, not proof
 Against temptation: thou thy self with scorn

Book IX. PARADISE LOST. 255

And anger wouldst resent the offer'd wrong, 300
 Though ineffectual found: misdeem not then
 If such affront I labour to avert

From thee alone, which on us both at once
 The Enemy, though bold, will hardly dare,
 Or daring, first on me th' assault shall light. 305

Nor thou his malice and false guile contemn;
 Little he needs must be, who could seduce
 Angels, nor think superfluous others aid.
 I from the influence of thy looks receive
 Success in every Virtue, in thy fight 310

More wise, more watchful, stronger, if need were
 Of outward strength; while shame, thou looking on,
 Shame to be overcome or over-reacht
 Would utmost vigor raise, and rais'd unite.

Why shouldst not thou like sense within thee feel 315
 When I am present, and thy trial chuse
 With me, best witness of thy Virtue try'd.

So spake domestick *Adam* in his care
 And Matrimonial Love; but *Eve*, who thought
 Less attributed to her Faith sincere, 320
 Thus her reply with accent sweet renew'd.

If this be our condition, thus to dwell
 In narrow circuit straiten'd by a Foe,
 Suttle or violent, we not endu'd
 Single with like defence, where-ever met, 325
 How are we happy, still in fear of harm?
 But harm precedes not sin: only our Foe
 Tempting affronts us with his foul esteem
 Of our integrity: his foul esteem

Sticks no dishonour on our Front, but turns 33
 Foul on himself; then wherefore shun'd or fear'd
 By us? who rather double honour gain
 From his surmise prov'd false, find peace within,
 Favour from Heav'n, our witnesses from th' event.
 And what is Faith, Love, Virtue unassay'd 34
 Alone, without exterior help sustain'd?
 Let us not then suspect our happy State
 Left so imperfect by the Maker wise,
 As not secure to single or combin'd,
 Frail is our happiness, if this be so, 35
 And *Eden* were to *Eden* thus expos'd.

To whom thus *Adam* fervently reply'd.
 O Woman, best are all things as the will
 Of God ordain'd them, his creating hand
 Nothing imperfect or deficient left 36
 Of all that he Created, much less Man,
 Or aught that might his happy State secure,
 Secure from outward force; within himself
 The danger lyes, yet lyes within his power:
 Against his will he can receive no harm, 37
 But God left free the Will, for what obeys
 Reason, is free, and Reason he made right,
 But bid her well beware, and still erect,
 Left by some fair appearing good surpris'd
 She dictate false, and misinform the Will 38
 To do what God expressly hath forbid.
 Not then mistrust, but tender love enjoyns,
 That I should mind thee oft, and mind thou me.
 Firm we subsist, yet possible to swerve,

Book IX. PARADISE LOST. 257

True Reason not impossibly may meet 360
Some specious object by the Foe suborn'd,
And fall into deception unaware,
Not keeping strictest watch, as she was warn'd.
Seek not temptation then, which to avoid
Were better, and most likely if from me 365
Thou sever not: Trial will come unsought.
Wouldst thou improve thy constancy, approve
First thy obedience; th'other who can know,
Not seeing thee attempted, who attest;
But if thou think, trial unsought may find 370
Is both securer than thus warn'd thou seem'st,
So; for thy stay, not free, absents thee more;
So in thy native innocence, rely
On what thou hast of virtue, summon all,
For God towards thee hath done his part, do thine.
So spake the Patriarch of Mankind, but Eve 376
Persisted, yet submits, though last, reply'd.
With thy permission then, and thus forewarn'd
Chiefly by what thy own last reasoning words
Touch'd only, that our trial, when least sought, 380
May find us both perhaps far less prepar'd,
The willinger I go, nor much expect
A Foe so proud will first the weaker seek;
So bent, the more shall shame him, his repulse.
Thus saying, from her Husband's hand her hand 385
Soft she withdrew, and like a Wood-Nymph light
Oread or Dryad, or of Delia's Train,
Betook her to the Groves, but Delia's self
In gate surpass'd, and Goddesses like depart,

Though not as she with Bow and Quiver arm'd,
 But with such Gardning Tools as Art yet rude,
 Guiltless of fire had form'd, or Angels brought.
 To *Pales*, or *Pomona* thus adorn'd,
 Likeliest she seem'd, *Pomona* when she fled
Vertumnus, or to *Ceres* in her Prime,
 Yet Virgin of *Proserpina* from *Jove*.
 Her long with ardent look his Eye pursu'd
 Delighted, but desiring more her stay.
 Oft he to her his charge of quick return
 Repeated, she to him as oft engag'd
 To be return'd by Noon amid the Bowre,
 And all things in best order to invite
 Noontide repast, or Afternoons repose.
 O much deceiv'd, much failing, hapless *Eve*,
 Of thy presum'd return! event perverse!
 Thou never from that hour in Paradise
 Foundst either sweet repast, or sound repose;
 Such ambush laid among sweet Flours and Shades
 Waited with hellish rancour imminent
 To intercept thy way, or send thee back
 Despoil'd of Innocence, of Faith, of Bliss.
 For now, and since first break of dawn the Fiend,
 Meer Serpent in appearance, forth was come,
 And on his Quest, where likeliest he might find
 The only two of Mankind, but in them
 The whole included Race, his purpos'd prey.
 In Bowre and Field he sought, where any tuft
 Of Grove or Garden-Plot more pleasant lay,
 Their tendance or Plantation for delight,

Fountain or by shady Rivulet 420
 He sought them both, but wish'd his hap might find
 He separate, he wish'd, but not with hope
 Of what so seldom chanc'd, when to his wish,
 Beyond his hope, Eve separate he spies,
 Veil'd in a Cloud of Fragrance, where she stood, 429
 Half spy'd, so thick the Roses bushing round
 About her glow'd, half stooping to support
 Each Flour of slender stalk, whose head though gay
 Carnation, Purple, Azure, or speck with Gold,
 Long drooping unsustain'd, them she upstays 430
 Gently with Mirtle band, mindless the while,
 Her self, though fairest unsupported Flour,
 From her best prop so far, and storm so nigh.
 Scarer he drew, and many a walk travers'd
 Of stateliest Covert, Cedar, Pine, or Palm, 435
 Then voluble and bold, now hid, now seen
 Among thick-wov'n Arborets and Flours
 Emborder'd on each Bank, the hand of Eve:
 Not more delicious than those Gardens feign'd
 Or of reviv'd Adonis, or renown'd 440
 Alcinous, host of old Laertes Son,
 Or that, not Mystic, where the Sapient King
 Held dalliance with his fair Egyptian Spouse.
 Much he the Place admir'd, the Person more.
 As one who long in populous City pent, 445
 Where Houses thick and Sewers annoy the Aire,
 Forth issuing on a Summers Morn to breathe
 Among the pleasant Villages and Farms
 Adjoyn'd, from each thing met conceives delight,

The smell of Grain, or tedded Grass, or Kine,
 Or Dairy, each rural sight, each rural sound;
 If chance with Nymphlike step fair Virgin pass,
 What pleasing seem'd, for her now pleases more
 She most, and in her look sums all Delight.
 Such pleasure took the Serpent to behold
 This Floury Plat, the sweet recess of *Eve*
 Thus early, thus alone; her Heav'nly form
 Angelic, but more soft, and Feminine,
 Her graceful Innocence, her every Aire
 Of gesture or least action overaw'd
 His Malice, and with rapine sweet bereav'd
 His fierceness of the fierce intent it brought:
 That space the Evil one abstracted stood
 From his own evil, and for the time remain'd
 Stupidly good, of enmity disarm'd,
 Of guile, of hate, of envy, of revenge;
 But the hot Hell that always in him burns,
 Though in mid Heav'n, soon ended his delight,
 And tortures him now more, the more he sees
 Of pleasure not for him ordain'd; then soon 47
 Fierce hate he recollects, and all his thoughts
 Of mischief, gratulating, thus excites.

Thoughts, whither have ye led me, with what sweet
 Compulsion thus transported to forget
 What hither brought us, hate, not love, nor hope
 Of Paradise for Hell, hope here to taste 476
 Of pleasure, but all pleasure to destroy,
 Save what is in destroying, other joy
 To me is lost. Then let me not let pass

Gen which now smiles, behold alone 480
 Woman, opportune to all attempts,
 Husband, for I view far round, not nigh,
 whose higher intellectual more I shun,
 whose strength, of courage haughty, and of limb
 heroic built, though of terrestrial mould, 485
 is not informidable, exempt from wound,
 not; so much hath Hell debas'd, and pain
 debild me, to what I was in Heav'n.
 O fair, divinely fair, fit Love for Gods,
 O terrible, though terror be in Love 490
 and beauty, not approacht by stronger hate,
 O stronger, under shew of Love well feign'd,
 O the way which to her ruin now I tend.
 So spake the Enemy of Mankind, enclos'd
 Serpent, inmate bad, and toward *Eve* 495
 address'd his way, not with indented wave,
 none on the ground, as since, but on his rear,
 circular base of rising foulds, that tower'd
 would above fould a furling Maze, his Head
 crested aloft, and Carbuncle his Eyes; 500
 With burnisht Neck of verdant Gold, erect
 Amidst his circling Spires, that on the grass
 floated redundant: pleasing was his shape,
 And lovely, never since of Serpent kind
 Lovelier, not those that in *Illyria* chang'd 505
Hermione and *Cadmus*, or the God
 In *Epidaurus*; nor to which transform'd
Ammonian Jove, or *Capitoline* was seen,
 He with *Olympias*, this with her who bore

Scipio the height of *Rome*. With tract oblique
 At first, as one who sought access, but fear'd
 To interrupt, side-long he works his way.
 As when a Ship by skilful Steersman wrought
 Nigh Rivers mouth or Foreland, where the Wind
 Veres oft, as oft so steers, and shifts her Sail:
 So vary'd he, and of his tortuous Train
 Curl'd many a wanton wreath in sight of *Eve*,
 To lure her Eye; she busied heard the sound
 Of rustling Leaves, but minded not, as us'd
 To such disport before her through the Field,
 From every Beast, more duteous at her call,
 Than at *Circean* call the Herd disguis'd.
 He bolder now, uncall'd before her stood;
 But as in gaze admiring: Oft he bow'd
 His turret Crest, and sleek enamel'd Neck,
 Fawning, and lick'd the ground whereon she trod.
 His gentle dumb expression turn'd at length
 The Eye of *Eve* to mark his play; he glad
 Of her attention gain'd, with Serpent Tongue
 Organic, or impulse of vocal Aire,
 His fraudulent temptation thus began.

Wonder not, sov'reign Mistress, if perhaps
 Thou canst, who art sole Wonder, much less am
 Thy looks, the Heav'n of mildness, with disdain,
 Displeas'd that I approach thee thus, and gaze
 Insatiate, I thus single, nor have fear'd
 Thy awful brow, more awful thus retir'd.
 Fairest resemblance of thy Maker fair,
 Thee all things living gaze on, all things thine

Off, and thy Celestial Beauty adore 540
 In ravishment beheld, there best beheld
 Ere universally admir'd; but here
 This enclosure wild, these Beasts among,
 Holders rude, and shallow to discern
 What in thee is fair, one man except, 545
 Who sees thee? (and what is one?) who shouldst be seen
 Goddess among Gods, ador'd and serv'd
 Angels numberless, thy daily Train.
 To glaz'd the Tempter, and his Proem tun'd;
 To the Heart of *Eve* his words made way, 550
 Though at the voice much marvelling; at length
 Unamaz'd she thus in answer spake.
 What may this mean? Language of Man pronounc'd
 Tongue of Brute, and human sense express'd?
 At first at least of these I thought deny'd 555
 Beasts, whom God on their Creation-Day
 Made mute to all articulat sound;
 The latter I demur, for in their looks
 Much reason, and in their actions oft appears.
 As, Serpent, subtlest beast of all the field 560
 Few, but not with human voice endu'd;
 Double then this miracle, and say,
 How can'st thou speakable of mute, and how
 Come so friendly grown above the rest
 Of brutal kind, that daily are in sight? 565
 For, for such wonder claims attention due.
 To whom the guileful Tempter thus reply'd.
 Express of this fair World, resplendent *Eve*,
 Asie to me it is to tell thee all

What thou commandst, and right thou shouldst
 I was at first as other Beasts that graze [obey
 The trodden Herb, of abject thoughts and low,
 As was my food, nor aught but food discern'd
 Or Sex, and apprehended nothing high:
 Till on a day roaving the field, I chanc'd
 A goodly Tree far distant to behold
 Loaden with fruit of fairest colours mixt,
 Ruddy and Gold: I nearer drew to gaze;
 When from the boughs a savoury odour blown
 Grateful to appetite, more pleas'd my sense
 Than smell of sweetest Fennel or the Tears
 Of Ewe or Goat dropping with Milk at Even,
 Unsuckt of Lamb or Kid, that tend their play.
 To satisfy the sharp desire I had
 Of tasting those fair Apples, I resolv'd
 Not to defer; hunger and thirst at once,
 Powerful persuaders, quicken'd at the scent
 Of that alluring fruit, urg'd me so keen.
 About the mossie Trunk I wound me soon,
 For high from ground the branches would require
 Thy utmost reach or *Adam's*: Round the Tree
 All other Beasts that saw, with like desire
 Longing and envying stood, but could not reach.
 Amid the Tree now got, where plenty hung
 Tempting so nigh, to pluck and eat my fill
 I spar'd not, for such pleasure till that hour
 At Feed or Fountain never had I found.
 Sated at length, e'er long I might perceive
 Strange alteration in me, to degree

Reason in my inward Powers, and Speech. 600
 Wasted not long, though to this shape retain'd.
 Thenceforth to Speculations high or deep
 I turn'd my Thoughts, and with capacious mind
 Consider'd all things visible in Heav'n,
 Or Earth, or Middle, all things fair and good; 605
 But all that fair and good in thy Divine
 Resemblance, and in thy Beauties heav'nly Ray
 United I beheld: no Fair to thine
 Equivalent or second, which compell'd
 Me thus, though importune perhaps, to come 610
 And gaze, and worship thee of right declar'd
 For'reign of Creatures, universal Dame.

So talk'd the spirited fly Snake; and Eve
 Yet more amaz'd unwary thus reply'd.

Serpent, thy overpraising leaves in doubt 615
 The virtue of that Fruit, in thee first prov'd:
 But say, where grows the Tree, from hence how far?
 For many are the Trees of God that grow
 In Paradise, and various, yet unknown
 To us, in such abundance lyes our choice, 620
 As leaves a greater store of Fruit untouch'd,
 Still hanging incorruptible, till men
 Grow up to their provision, and more hands
 Help to disburden Nature of her Birth.

To whom the wily Adder, blithe and glad. 625
 Empress, the way is ready, and not long,
 Beyond a row of Myrtles, on a Flat,
 Fast by a Fountain, one small Thicket past
 Of blowing Myrrh and Balm; if thou accept

My conduct, I can bring thee thither soon. 630

Lead then, said *Eve*. He leading swiftly rowl'd
In tangles, and made intricate seem strait,
To mischief swift. Hope elevates, and joy
Bright'ns his Crest, as when a wandering Fire,
Compact and unduous vapor, which the Night 635
Condenses, and the cold invirons round,
Kindl'd through agitation to a Flame,
Which oft, they say, some evil Spirit attends
Hovering and blazing with delusive Light,
Misleads th'amaz'd Night-wanderer from his way 640
Through Bogs and Mires, and oft thro' Pond or Pool
There swallow'd up and lost, from succour far:
So glister'd the dire Snake, and into fraud
Led *Eve* our credulous Mother, to the Tree
Of prohibition, root of all our woe; 645

Which when she saw, thus to her guide she spake.

Serpent, we might have spar'd our coming hither,
Fruitless to me, though Fruit be here to excess,
The credit of whose virtue rest with thee,
Wondrous indeed, if cause of such effects. 650

But of this Tree we may not taste nor touch;
God so commanded, and left that Command
Sole Daughter of his voice; the rest, we live
Law to our selves, our Reason is our Law.

To whom the Tempter guilefully reply'd. 655
Indeed? hath God then said that of the Fruit
Of all these Garden Trees ye shall not eat,
Yet Lords declar'd of all in Earth or Aire?

To whom thus *Eve* yet sinless. Of the Fruit

Of each Tree in the Garden we may eat, 660
 Of the Fruit of this fair Tree amidst
 The Garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eat
 Thereof, nor shall ye touch it, lest ye die.

She scarce had said, tho' brief, when now more bold
 The Tempter, but with shew of Zeal and Love 665
 To Man, and indignation at his wrong,
 New part puts on, and as to passion mov'd,
 Fluctuats disturb'd, yet comely and in act
 Laid, as of some great matter to begin.

When of old some Orator renown'd 670
 Athens or free Rome, where Eloquence
 Flourish'd, since mute, to some great cause address'd,
 Hood in himself collected, while each part,
 Motion, each act won audience e'er the tongue,
 Sometimes in heighth began, as no delay 675
 Of Preface brooking through his Zeal of Right,
 Standing, moving, or to heighth up grown
 The Tempter all impassion'd thus began.

O Sacred, Wise, and Wisdom-giving Plant,
 Mother of Sciences, Now I feel thy Power 680
 Within me clear, not only to discern
 Things in their Causes, but to trace the ways
 Of highest Agents, deem'd however wise.
 Queen of this Universe, do not believe
 Those rigid threats of Death; ye shall not die: 685
 How should ye? by the Fruit? it gives you Life
 To Knowledge? By the Threatner? look on me,
 Me who have touch'd and tasted, yet both live,
 And life more perfect have attain'd than Fate

Meant me, by ventring higher than my Lot. 690
 Shall that be shut to Man, which to the Beast
 Is open? or will God incense his ire
 For such a petty trespass, and not praise
 Rather your dauntless virtue, whom the pain
 Of Death denounc'd, whatever thing Death be, 695
 Deterr'd not from atchieving what might lead
 To happier life, knowledge of Good and Evil;
 Of good, how just? of evil, if what is evil
 Be real, why not known, since easier shunn'd?
 God therefore cannot hurt ye, and be just; 700
 Not just, not God; not fear'd then, nor obey'd:
 Your fear it self of Death removes the fear.
 Why then was this forbid? Why but to awe,
 Why but to keep ye low and ignorant,
 His worshippers; he knows that in the day 705
 Ye Eat thereof, your Eyes that seem so clear,
 Yet are but dim, shall perfectly be then
 Open'd and clear'd, and ye shall be as Gods,
 Knowing both Good and Evil, as they know.
 That ye shall be as Gods, since I as Man, 710
 Internal Man, is but proportion meet,
 I of brute human, ye of human Gods.
 So ye shall die perhaps, by putting off
 Human, to put on Gods, death to be wisht, 715
 Tho' threaten'd, which no worse than this can bring.
 And what are Gods that Man may not become
 As they, participating God-like food?
 The Gods are first, and that advantage use
 On our belief, that all from them proceeds;

question it, for this fair Earth I see, 720
 form'd by the Sun, producing every kind,
 seem nothing: If they all things, who enclos'd
 knowledge of Good and Evil in this Tree,
 but who so eats thereof, forthwith attains
 wisdom without their leave? and wherein lyes 725
 offence, that Man should thus attain to know?
 What can your knowledge hurt him, or this Tree
 apart against his will if all be his?
 Is it envy, and can envy dwell
 heav'nly breasts? these, these and many more 730
 cases import your need of this fair Fruit.
 Doubtless humane, reach then, and freely taste.
 He ended, and his words replete with guile
 to her heart too easie entrance won:
 Yet on the Fruit she gaz'd, which to behold 735
 might tempt alone, and in her ears the sound
 & rung of his persuasive words, impregn'd
 with Reason, to her seeming, and with Truth;
 And while the hour of Noon drew on, and wak'd
 her eager appetite, rais'd by the smell 740
 savoury of that Fruit, which with desire,
 desirous now grown to touch or taste,
 solicited her longing Eye; yet first
 resting a while, thus to her self she mus'd.
 Great are thy Virtues, doubtless, best of Fruits, 745
 though kept from Man, and worthy to be admir'd,
 whose taste, too long forborn, at first assay
 gave elocution to the mute, and taught
 the Tongue not made for Speech to speak thy praise:

Thy praise he also who forbids thy use, 75
 Conceals not from us, naming thee the Tree
 Of Knowledge, knowledge both of good and evil
 Forbids us then to taste, but his forbidding
 Commends thee more, while it infers the good
 By thee communicated, and our want : 75
 For good unknown, sure is not had, or had
 And yet unknown, is as not had at all.
 In plain then, what forbids he but to know,
 Forbids us good, forbids us to be wise?
 Such prohibitions bind not. But if Death
 Bind us with after-bands, what profits then
 Our inward freedom? In the day we eat
 Of this fair Fruit, our doom is, we shall die.
 How dies the Serpent? he hath eat'n and lives,
 And knows, and speaks, and reasons, and discerns, 75
 Irrational till then. For us alone
 Was death invented? or to us deny'd
 This intellectual food, for Beasts reserv'd?
 For Beasts it seems : yet that one Beast which first
 Hath tasted, envies not, but brings with joy 75
 The good befall'n him, Author unsuspect,
 Friendly to man, far from deceit or guile.
 What fear I then, rather what know to fear
 Under this ignorance of good and Evil,
 Of God or Death, of Law or Penalty? 75
 Here grows the Cure of all, this Fruit Divine,
 Fair to the Eye, inviting to the Taste,
 Of virtue to make wise : what hinders then
 To reach, and feed at once both Body and Mind?

So saying, her rash hand in evil hour 786
 Forth reaching to the Fruit, she pluck'd, she eat:
 Earth felt the wound, and Nature from her seat
 Sighing through all her Works gave signs of woe,
 That all was lost. Back to the Thicket flunk
 The guilty Serpent, and well might, for Eve 788
 Intent now wholly on her taste, naught else
 Regarded, such delight till then, as seem'd,
 In Fruit she never tasted, whether true
 Or fancy'd so, through expectation high
 Of knowledge, nor was God-head from her thought.
 Greedily she ingorg'd without restraint, 791
 And knew not eating Death: Satiatè at length,
 And heighten'd as with Wine, jocund and boon,
 Thus to her self she pleasingly began.
 O Sov'reign, virtuous, precious of all Trees 795
 In Paradise, of operation blest
 To Sapience, hitherto obscur'd, infam'd,
 And thy fair Fruit let hang, as to no end
 Created; but henceforth my early care, 798
 Not without Song, each Morning, and due praise
 Shall tend thee, and the fertil burden ease
 Of thy full branches offer'd free to all;
 Till dieted by thee I grow mature
 In knowledge, as the Gods who all things know;
 Though others envy what they cannot give; 805
 For had the gift been theirs, it had not here
 Thus grown. Experience, next to thee I owe,
 Best guide; not following thee, I had remain'd
 In ignorance, thou op'n'st Wisdoms way,

And giv'st access, though secret she retire. 310
 And I perhaps am secret; Heav'n is high,
 High and remote to see from thence distinct
 Each thing on Earth; and other care perhaps
 May have diverted from continual watch
 Our great Forbidder, safe with all his Spies 315
 About him. But to *Adam* in what sort
 Shall I appear? shall I to him make known
 As yet my change, and give him to partake
 Full happiness with me, or rather not,
 But keep the odds of Knowledge in my power 320
 Without Copartner? so to add what wants
 In Female Sex, the more to draw his Love,
 And render me more equal, and perhaps,
 A thing not undesirable, sometime
 Superior; for inferior who is free? 325
 This may be well: but what if God have seen,
 And Death ensue? then I shall be no more,
 And *Adam* wedded to another *Eve*,
 Shall live with her enjoying, I extinct;
 A death to think. Confirm'd then I resolve, 330
Adam shall share with me in bliss or woe:
 So dear I love him, that with him all deaths
 I could endure, without him live no life.

So saying, from the Tree her step she turn'd,
 But first low reverence done, as to the power 335
 That dwelt within, whose presence had infus'd
 Into the plant scintial sap, deriv'd
 From Nectar, drink of Gods. *Adam* the while
 Waiting desirous her return, had wove

OF choicest Flours a Garland to adorn 840
 Her Tresses, and her rural labours crown,
 As Reapers oft are wont their Harvest Queen.
 Great joy he promis'd to his thoughts, and new
 Solace in her return, so long delay'd;
 Yet oft his heart, divine of something ill, 845
 Misgave him; he the fault'ring measure felt;
 And forth to meet her went, the way she took
 That Morn when first they parted; by the Tree
 Of Knowledge he must pass, there he her met,
 Scarce from the Tree returning; in her hand 850
 A bough of fairest fruit that downy smil'd,
 New gather'd, and ambrosial-smell diffus'd.
 To him she hasted, in her face excuse
 Came Prologue and Apology to prompt, 854
 Which with bland words at will she thus address'd.
 Hast thou not wonder'd, *Adam*, at my stay?
 Thee I have mis'd, and thought it long, depriv'd
 Thy presence, agony of love till now
 Not felt, nor shall be twice, for never more
 Mean I to try, what rash untry'd I sought, 860
 The pain of absence from thy sight. But strange
 Hath been the cause, and wonderful to hear:
 This Tree is not as we are told, a Tree
 Of danger tasted, nor to evil unknown
 Op'ning the way; but of divine effect 865
 To open Eyes, and make them Gods who taste;
 And hath been tasted such: the Serpent wise,
 Or not restrain'd as we, or not obeying,
 Hath eat'n of the fruit, and is become

Not dead, as we are threaten'd, but thenceforth,
 Indu'd with human voice and human sense, 874
 Reasoning to admiration, and with me
 Persuasively hath so prevail'd, that I
 Have also tasted, and have also found
 Th' effects to correspond, opener mine Eyes, 876
 Dim erst, dilated Spirits, ampler Heart,
 And growing up to Godhead; which for thee
 Chiefly I sought, without thee can despise.
 For bliss, as thou hast part, to me is bliss,
 Tedious, unshar'd with thee, and odious soon. 880
 Thou therefore also taste, that equal Lot
 May joyn us, equal Joy, as equal Love;
 Lest thou not tasting, different degree
 Disjoyn us, and I then too late renounce
 Deity for thee, when Fate will not permit. 884

Thus *Eve* with Count'nance blithe her story told;
 But in her Cheek distemper flushing glow'd.
 On th' other side, *Adam*, soon as he heard
 The fatal Trespass done by *Eve*, amaz'd,
 Astonied stood and Blank, while horror chill 890
 Ran through his veins, and all his joints relax'd;
 From his slack hand the Garland wreath'd for *Eve*
 Down drop'd, and all the faded Roses shed:
 Speechless he stood and pale, till thus at length
 First to himself he inward silence broke. 895

O fairest of Creation, last and best
 Of all God's works, Creature in whom excell'd
 Whatever can to sight or thought be form'd,
 Holy, divine, good, amiable, or sweet!

How art thou lost, how on a sudden lost, 905
Defac'd, deflour'd, and now to Death devote?
Rather how hast thou yielded to transgress
The strict forbiddance, how to violate
The sacred Fruit forbid'n! some cursed fraud
Of Enemy hath beguil'd thee, yet unknown, 908
And me with thee hath ruin'd, for with thee
Certain my resolution is to Die;
How can I live without thee, how forgo
Thy sweet Converse and Love, so dearly joyn'd,
To live again in these wild Woods forlorn? 910
Should God create another Eve, and I
Another Rib afford, yet loss of thee
Would never from my heart; no no, I feel
The Link of Nature draw me: Flesh of Flesh,
Bone of my Bone thou art, and from thy State 915
Mine never shall be parted, bliss or woe.

So having said, as one from sad dismay
 Recomforted, and after thoughts disturb'd
 Submitting to what seem'd remediless,
Thus in calm mood his Words to Eve he turn'd. 920

Bold deed thou hast presum'd, adventurous Eve,
And peril great provok'd, who thus hath dar'd
Had it been only coveting to Eye
That sacred Fruit, sacred to abstinence,
Much more to taste it under bane to touch. 925
But past who can recal, or done undo?
Not God Omnipotent, nor Fate, yet so
Perhaps thou shalt not die, perhaps the Fact
Is not so heinous now, foretasted Fruit,

Profan'd first by the Serpent, by him first 230
 Made common and unhallow'd e'er our taste;
 Nor yet on him found deadly, he yet lives,
 Lives, as thou saidst, and gaines to live as Man
 Higher degree of Life, inducement strong
 To us, as likely tasting to attain 235
 Proportional ascent, which cannot be
 But to be Gods, or Angels Demi-gods.
 Nor can I think that God, Creator wise,
 Though threatning, will in earnest so destroy
 Us his prime Creatures, dignify'd so high, 240
 Set over all his Works, which in our Fall,
 For us created, needs with us must fail,
 Dependent made; so God shall uncreate,
 Be frustrate, do, undo, and labour lose,
 Not well conceiv'd of God, who tho' his Power 245
 Creation could repeat, yet would be loath
 Us to abolish, lest the Adversary
 Triumph and say; Fickle their State whom God
 Most Favours, who can please him long; Me first
 He ruin'd, now Mankind; whom will he next? 250
 Matter of scorn, not to be given the Foe.
 However I with thee have fixt my Lot,
 Certain to undergo like doom, if Death
 Consort with thee, Death is to me as Life;
 So forcible within my heart I feel 255
 The Bond of Nature draw me to my own,
 My own in thee, for what thou art is mine;
 Our State cannot be sever'd, we are one,
 One Flesh; to lose thee were to lose my self.

Book IX. PARADISE LOST. 277

So *Adam*, and thus *Eve* to him reply'd, 960
In glorious trial of exceeding Love,
Illustrious evidence, example high!
Engaging me to emulate, but short
Of thy perfection, how shall I attain,
Adam, from whose dear side I boast me sprung, 965
And gladly of our Union hear thee speak,
One heart, one Soul in both; whereof good proof
This day affords, declaring thee resolv'd,
Rather than Death or aught than Death more dread
Shall separate us, linkt in Love so dear, 970
To undergo with me one Guilt, one Crime,
If any be, of tasting this fair Fruit,
Whose virtue, for of good still good proceeds,
Direct, or by occasion hath presented
This happy trial of thy Love, which else 975
So eminently never had been known.
Were it I thought Death menac'd would ensue
This my attempt, I would sustain alone
The worst, and not persuade thee, rather die
Deserted, than oblige thee with a fact 980
Pernicious to thy peace, chiefly assur'd
Remarkably so late of thy so true,
So faithful Love unequal'd; but I feel
Far otherwise th'event, not Death, but Life
Augmented, open'd Eyes, new Hopes, new Joys, 985
Taste so divine, that what of sweet before
Hath touch'd my sense, flat seems to this, and harsh.
On my experience, *Adam*, freely taste,
And fear of Death deliver to the Winds,

So saying, she embrac'd him, and for joy 990
 Tenderly wept, much won that he his Love
 Had so enobl'd, as of choice to incur
 Divine displeasure for her sake, or Death.
 In recompence (for such compliance bad
 Such recompence best merits) from the bough 995
 She gave him of that fair enticing Fruit
 With liberal hand: he scrupl'd not to eat
 Against his better knowledge, not deceiv'd,
 But fondly overcome with Female charm.
 Earth trembl'd from her entrails, as again 1000
 In pangs, and Nature gave a second groan,
 Sky lowr'd and muttering Thunder, some sad drops
 Wept at compleating of the mortal Sin
 Original; while *Adam* took no thought,
 Eating his fill, nor *Eve* to iterate 1005
 Her former trespass fear'd, the more to sooth
 Him with her lov'd society, that now
 As with new Wine intoxicated both
 They swim in mirth, and fancy that they feel
 Divinity within them breeding wings 1010
 Wherewith to scorn the Earth: but that false Fruit
 Far other operation first display'd,
 Carnal desire enflaming, he on *Eve*
 Began to cast lascivious Eyes, she him
 As wantonly repaid; in lust they burn 1015
 Till *Adam* thus 'gan *Eve* to dalliance move.

Eve, now I see thou art exact of taste,
 And elegant, of Sapience no small part,
 Since to each meaning favour we apply.

And Palate call judicious ; I the praise 1020

Field thee, so well this day thou hast purvey'd.
 Much pleasure we have lost, while we abstain'd
 From this delightful Fruit, nor known till now
 True relish, tasting ; if such pleasure be
 In things to us forbidden, it might be with'd, 1025
 For this one Tree had been forbidden ten.

But come, so well refresh'd, now let us play,
 As meet is, after such delicious Fare ;
 For never did thy Beauty since the day
 I saw thee first and wedded thee, adorn'd 1030
 With all perfections, so enflame my sense
 With ardor to enjoy thee, fairer now
 Than ever, bounty of this virtuous Tree.

So said he, and forbore not glance or toy
 Of amorous intent, well understood 1035

Of Eve, whose Eye darted contagious Fire.
 Her hand he seis'd, and to a shady bank,
 Thick overhead with verdant roof imbowl'd
 He led her nothing loath ; Flours were the Couch,
 Panies, and Violets, and Asphodel, 1040

And Hyacinth, Earths freshest softest lap.
 There they their fill of Love and Loves disport
 Took largely ; of their mutual guilt the Seal,
 The solace of their sin, till dewy sleep
 Oppress'd them, wearied with their amorous play.
 Soon as the force of that fallacious Fruit, 1045

That with exhilarating vapour bland
 About their spirits had plaid, and inmost powers
 Made err, was now exhal'd, and grosser sleep

Bred of unkindly fumes, with conscious dreams 1055
 Encumber'd, now had left them, up they rose
 As from unrest, and each the other viewing,
 Soon found their Eyes how open'd, and their mind
 How darken'd; innocence, that as a veil
 Had shadow'd them from knowing ill, was gone,
 Just confidence, and native righteousness 1059
 And honour from about them, naked left
 To guilty shame he cover'd, but his Robe
 Uncover'd more: so rose the *Danite* strong
Herculean Sampson from the Harlot-lap 1063
 Of *Philistian Dalilah*, and wak'd

Shorn of his strength; They destitute and bare
 Of all their virtue: silent, and in face
 Confounded long they sat, as struck'n mute,
 Till *Adam*, though no less than *Eve* abash'd, 1067
 At length gave utterance to these words constrain'd

O *Eve*, in evil hour thou didst give ear
 To that false Worm, of whomsoever taught
 To counterfeit Man's voice, true in our Fall,
 False in our promis'd Rising; since our Eyes 1071
 Open'd we find indeed, and find we know
 Both Good and Evil, Good lost, and Evil got;
 Bad Fruit of Knowledge, if this be to know,
 Which leaves us naked thus, of Honour void,
 Of Innocence, of Faith, of Purity, 1075
 Our wonted Ornaments now soil'd and stain'd,
 And in our Faces evident the signs
 Of foul concupiscence; whence evil store;
 Even shame, the last of evils; of the first.

Be sure then. How shall I behold the face 1080
 Henceforth of God or Angel, earst with joy
 And rapture so oft beheld? those heav'nly shapes
 All dazle now this earthly, with their blaze
 Sufferably bright. O might I here
 In solitude live savage, in some glade 1085
 Obscur'd, where highest Woods impenetrable
 No Star or Sun-light, spread their umbrage broad
 And brown as Evening: Cover me ye Pines,
 Ye Cedars, with innumerable boughs
 Hide me, where I may never see them more. 1090
 But let us now, as in bad plight, devise
 What best may for the present serve to hide
 The Parts of each from other, that seem most
 To shame obnoxious, and unseemliest seen,
 Some Tree whose broad smooth Leaves together sow'd,
 And girded on our loyns may cover round 1096
 Those middle parts, that this new comer, Shame,
 There sit not, and reproach us as unclean.
 So counsell'd he, and both together went
 Into the thickest Wood, there soon they chose 1100
 The Figtree, not that kind for Fruit renown'd,
 But such as at this day to *Indians* known
 In *Malabar* or *Decan* spreads her Arms
 Branching so broad and long, that in the ground
 The bended Twigs take root, and Daughters grow
 About the Mother Tree, a Pillard shade 1106
 High overarch'd, and echoing Walks between;
 There oft the *Indian* Herdsman shunning heat
 Shelters in cool, and tends his pasturing Herds

At Loopholes cut thro' thickest shade: Those Leaves
 They gather'd broad as *Amazonian* Targe, 111
 And with what skill they had, together sow'd,
 To gird their waste, vain Covering if to hide
 Their guilt and dreaded shame; O how unlike
 To that first naked Glory. Such of late 112
Columbus found th' *American* to girt
 With feather'd Cinéture, naked else and wild
 Among the Trees on Isles and woody Shores.
 Thus fenc'd, and as they thought their shame in part
 Cover'd, but not at rest or ease of Mind, 113
 They sat them down to weep, nor only Tears
 Rain'd at their Eyes, but high Winds worse within
 Began to rise, high Passions, Anger, Hate,
 Mistrust, Suspicion, Discord, and shook sore
 Their inward State of Mind, calm Region once 114
 And full of Peace, now tost and turbulent:
 For Understanding rul'd not, and the Will
 Heard not her lore, but in subjection now
 To sensual Appetite, who from beneath
 Usurping over Sov'reign Reason claim'd 115
 Superior sway: from thus disemper'd Breast,
Adam, estrang'd in look and alter'd stile,
 Speech intermitted thus to *Eve* renew'd.

Would thou hadst harken'd to my words, and stay'd
 With me, as I besought thee, when that strange
 Desire of wandering this unhappy Morn, 116
 I know not whence possess'd thee; we had then
 Remain'd still happy, not as now, dispos'd
 Of all our good, sham'd, naked, miserable.

Book IX. PARADISE LOST. 283

**Let none henceforth seek needless cause to approve
The Faith they owe ; when earnestly they seek 1140
Such proof, conclude, they then begin to fail.**

**To whom soon mov'd with touch of blame thus *Eve*•
What words have past thy Lips, *Adam* severe,
Imput'st thou that to my default, or will 1145
Of wandring, as thou call'st it, which who knows
But might as ill have happen'd thou being by,
Or to thy self perhaps: hadst thou been there,
Or here th'attempt, thou couldst not have discern'd
Fraud in the Serpent, speaking as he spake; 1150
No ground of enmity between us known,
Why he should mean me ill, or seek to harm.**

**Was I to have never parted from thy side?
As good have grown there still a lifeless Rib.
Being as I am, why didst not thou the Head 1155
Command me absolutely not to go,
Going into such danger, as thou saidst?
Too facil then thou didst not much gainsay,
Nay didst permit, approve, and fair dismiss.
Hadst thou been firm and fixt in thy dissent, 1160
Neither had I transgress'd, nor thou with me.**

**To whom then first incens'd *Adam* reply'd,
Is this the Love, is this the recompence
Of mine to thee, ingrateful *Eve*, exprest
Immutable when thou wert lost, not I, 1165
Who might have liv'd, and joy'd immortal bliss,
Yet willingly chose rather Death with thee:
And am I now upbraided, as the cause
Of thy transgressing? not enough severe,**

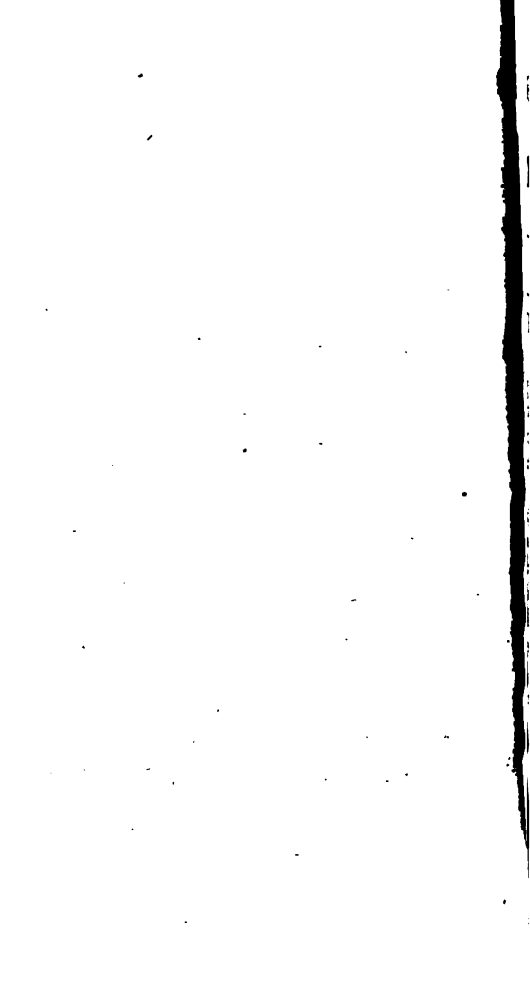
It seems, in my restraint : what could I more :
 I warn'd thee, I admonish'd thee, foretold
 The danger, and the lurking Enemy
 That lay in wait ; beyond this had been force,
 And force upon free will hath here no place.
 But confidence then bore thee on, secure
 Either to meet no danger, or to find
 Matter of glorious trial ; and perhaps
 I also err'd in overmuch admiring
 What seem'd in thee so perfect, that I thought
 No evil durst attempt thee, but I rue
 That error now, which is become my crime,
 And thou th' accuser. Thus it shall befall
 Him who to worth in Women overtrusting
 Lets her will rule ; refrant she will not brook,
 And left to her self, if evil thence ensue,
 She first his weak indulgence will accuse.

Thus they in mutual accusation spent
 The fruitless hours, but neither self-condemning
 And of their vain contest appear'd no end.

The End of the Ninth Book.



Lib. X.





Paradise Lost.

BOOK X.

The ARGUMENT.

Man's transgression known, the Guardian Angels forsake Paradise, and return up to Heaven to approve their vigilance, and are approv'd, God declaring that the entrance of Satan could not be by them prevented. He sends his Son to judge the Transgressors, who descends and gives Sentence accordingly; then in pity cloaths them both, and reascends. Sin and Death sitting till then at the Gates of Hell, by wondrous Sympathy feeling the success of Satan in this new World, and the sin by Man there committed, resolve to sit no longer confin'd in Hell, but to follow Satan their Sire up to the place of Man: To make the way easier from Hell to this World to and fro, they pave a broad High-way or Bridge over Chaos, according to the Track that Satan first made; then pre-

paring for Earth, they meet him proud of his success returning to Hell; their mutual gratulation. Satan arrives at Pandemonium, in full of assembly relates with boasting his success against Man; instead of applause is entertained with a general hiss by all his audience transform'd with himself also suddenly into Serpents, according to his doom giv'n in Paradise; then deluded with a shew of the forbidden Tree springing up before them, they greedily reaching to take of the Fruit, chew dust and bitter ashes. The proceedings of Sin and Death; God foretels the final Victory of his Son over them, and the renewing of all things; but for the present commands his Angels to make several alterations in the Heavens and Elements. Adam more and more perceiving his fall'n condition heavily bewails, rejects the condolment of Eve; she persists and at length appenses him; then to evade the Curse likely to fall on their Off-spring, proposes to Adam violent ways which he approves not, but conceiving better hope, puts her in mind of the late Promise made them, that her Seed should be reveng'd on the Serpent, and exhorts her with him to seek Peace of the offended Deity, by repentance and supplication.

WHILE the hainous and despiteful act
 Of *Satan* done in Paradise, and how
 in the Serpent, had perverted *Eve*,
 Husband she, to taste the fatal fruit,
 known in Heav'n; for what can scape the Eye;
 God All-seeing, or deceive his Heart
 Omnipotent, who in all things wise and just,
 wou'd not *Satan* to attempt the mind
 of Man, with strength entire, and free will arm'd,
 could tempt to have discover'd and repuls'd 10
 whatever wiles of Foe or seeming Friend.
 Yet still they knew, and ought to have still remember'd
 the high Injunction not to taste that Fruit,
 however tempted; which they not obeying,
 incur'd, what could they less, the Penalty, 15
 so manifold in sin, deserv'd to fall.
 Thence into Heav'n from Paradise in haste
 his Angelic Guards ascended, mute and sad
 for Man, for of his state by this they knew,
 such wondring how the subtle Fiend had stoln 20
 entrance unseen. Soon as th'unwelcome news
 from Earth arriv'd at Heaven Gate, displeas'd
 all were who heard, dim sadness did not spare
 that time Celestial visages, yet mixt
 With pity, violated not their bliss. 25
 About the new-arriv'd, in multitudes
 the ethereal People ran, to hear and know
 how all befel: they towards the Throne Supreme
 Accountable made haste to make appear

With righteous plea, their utmost vigilance,
And easily approv'd; when the most High
Eternal Father from his secret Cloud,
Amidst in Thunder utter'd thus his voice.

Assembl'd Angels, and ye Powers return'd
From unsuccessful charge, be not dismay'd,
Nor troubl'd at these tidings from the Earth,
Which your sincerest care could not prevent,
Foretold so lately what would come to pass,
When first this Tempter cross'd the Gulf from H
I told ye then he should prevail and speed
On this bad Errand, Man should be seduc'd
And flatter'd out of all, believing lies
Against his Maker; no Decree of mine
Concurring to necessitate his Fall,
Or touch with lightest moment of impulse
His free Will, to her own inclining left
In even scale. But fall'n he is, and now
What rests but that the mortal Sentence pass
On his transgression Death denounc'd that day,
Which he presumes already vain and void,
Because not yet inflicted, as he fear'd,
By some immediate stroke; but soon shall find
Forbearance no acquittance e'er day end.
Justice shall not return as bounty scorn'd.
But whom send I to judge them? whom but thee ss
Vicegerent Son, to thee I have transferr'd
All Judgement whether in Heav'n, or Earth, or Hell
Easie it might be seen that I intend
Mercy colleague with Justice sending thee

Book X. PARADISE LOST. 289

Man's Friend, his Mediator, his design'd 50
Both Ransom and Redeemer voluntary,

And destin'd Man himself to judge Man fall'n.

So spake the Father, and unfolding bright
Toward the right hand his Glory, on the Son
Blaz'd forth unclouded Deity; he full 65
Resplendent all his Father manifest

Express'd, and thus divinely answer'd milde.

Father Eternal, thine is to decree,
Mine both in Heav'n and Earth to do thy will
Supream, that thou in me thy Son belov'd 70
Mayst ever rest well pleas'd. I go to judge

On Earth these thy transgressors, but thou knowst,
Whoever judg'd, the worst on me must light,

When time shall be, for so I undertook
Before thee; and not repenting, this obtain 75
Of right, that I may mitigate their doom

On me deriv'd, yet I shall temper so
Justice with Mercy, as may illustrate most
Them fully satisfy'd, and thee appease.

Attendance none shall need, nor Train, where none
Are to behold the Judgment, but the judg'd, 81
Those two; the third best absent is condemn'd,
Convict by flight, and Rebel to all Law
Conviction to the Serpent none belongs.

Thus saying, from his radiant Seat he rose 85
Of high collateral glory: him Thrones and Powers,
Princedoms, and Dominations ministrant,
Accompany'd to Heaven Gate, from whence
Eden, and all the Coast in prospect lay.

Down he-descended strait; the speed of Gods
 Time counts not, tho' with swiftest minutes wing'd
 Now was the Sun in Western cadence low
 From Noon, and gentle Aires due at their hour
 To fan the Earth now wak'd, and usher in
 The Evening cool, when he from wrath more cool
 Came the mild Judge and Intercessor both
 To sentence Man: the voice of God they heard,
 Now walking in the Garden, by soft winds
 Brought to their Ears, while day declin'd, they heard
 And from his presence hid themselves among
 The thickest Trees, both Man and Wife, till God
 Approaching, thus to *Adam* call'd aloud.

Where art thou *Adam*, wont with joy to meet:
 My coming seen far off? I miss thee here,
 Not pleas'd, thus entertain'd with solitude,
 Where obvious duty e'er while appear'd unsought:
 Or come I less conspicuous, or what change
 Absents thee, or what chance detains? Come forth.
 He came, and with him *Eve*, more loth, tho' loth
 To offend, discount'nanc'd both, and discompos'd:
 Love was not in their looks, either to God
 Or to each other, but apparent guilt,
 And shame, and perturbation, and despair,
 Anger, and obstinacy, and hate, and guile.
 Whence *Adam* faultring long, thus answer'd brief.

I heard thee in the Garden, and of thy voice
 Afraid, being naked, hid my self. To whom
 The gracious Judge without revile reply'd.

My voice thou oft hast heard, and hast not fear'd

But still rejoyc'd, how is it now become 120
So dreadful to thee? that thou art naked, who
Hath told thee? hast thou eaten of the Tree
Whereof I gave thee charge thou shouldst not eat?

To whom thus *Adam* sore beset reply'd.

O Heav'n! in evil strait this day I stand 125
Before my Judge, either to undergo
My self the total Crime, or to accuse
My other self, the partner of my life;
Whose failing, while her Faith to me remains,
I should conceal, and not expose to blame 130
By my complaint; but strict necessity
Subdues me, and calamitous constraint,
Lest on my head both sin and punishment,
However insupportable, be all 134
Devolv'd; though should I hold my peace, yet then
Wouldst easily detect what I conceal.

This Woman whom thou mad'st to be my help,
And gav'st me as thy perfect gift, so good,
So fit, so acceptable, so Divine,
That from her hand I could suspect no ill, 140
And what she did, whatever in it self,
Her doing seem'd to justify the deed;
She gave me of the Tree, and I did eat.

To whom the sov'reign Presence thus reply'd.
Was she thy God, that her thou didst obey 145
Before his voice, or was she made thy guide,
Superior, or but equal, that to her
Thou didst resign thy Manhood, and the Place
Wherein God set thee above her made of thee,

And for thee, whose perfection far excell'd 158
Hers in all real dignity? Adorn'd

She was indeed, and lovely to attract
Thy Love, not thy Subjection, and her Gifts
Were such as under Government well seem'd,
Unseemly to bear rule, which was thy part 159
And person, hadst thou known thy self aright.

So having said, he thus to *Eve* in few :
Say Woman, what is this that thou hast done?

To whom sad *Eve* with shame nigh overwhelm'd,
Confessing soon, yet not before her Judge 160
Bold or loquacious, thus abash'd reply'd.

The Serpent me beguil'd and I did eat.

Which when the Lord God heard, without delay
To Judgement he proceeded on th'accus'd
Serpent though brute, unable to transfer 161
The Guilt on him who made him instrument
Of mischief, and polluted from the end
Of his Creation; justly then accurst,
As vitiated in Nature: more to know
Concern'd not Man (since he no farther knew) 170
Nor alter'd his offence; yet God at last
To Satan first in sin his doom apply'd,
Though in mysterious terms, judg'd as then best:
And on the Serpent thus his curse let fall.

Because thou hast done this, thou art accurst 171
Above all Cattle, each Beast of the Field;
Upon thy Belly groveling thou shalt go,
And dust shalt eat all the days of thy Life.
Between thee and the Woman I will put

Harmony; and between thine and her Seed; 180
Her Seed shall bruise thy head, thou bruise his heel.

So spake this Oracle, then verify'd
When *Jesus* son of *Mary* second *Eve*,
Saw *Satan* fall like Lightning down from Heav'n,
Prince of the Aire; then rising from his Grave. 185
Spoil'd Principalities and Powers, triumph
In open shew, and with ascension bright
Captive led captive through the Aire,
The Realm it self of *Satan* long usurpt,
Whom he shall tread at last under our feet; 190
Even he who now foretold his fatal bruise,
And to the Woman thus his Sentence turn'd.

Thy Sorrow I will greatly multiply
By thy Conception; Children thou shalt bring.
In sorrow forth, and to thy Husband's will 195
Thine shall submit, he over thee shall rule.

On *Adam* last thus judgement he pronounc'd.
Because thou hast hearken'd to the voice of thy Wife,
And eaten of the Tree, concerning which
I charg'd thee, saying, Thou shalt not eat thereof, 200
Curs'd is the ground for thy sake, thou in sorrow
Shalt eat thereof all the days of thy Life;
Thorns also and Thistles it shall bring thee forth
Unbid, and thou shalt eat th' Herb of th' Field.
In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat Bread, 205
Till thou return unto the ground, for thou
Out of the ground wast taken, know thy Birth,
For dust thou art, and shalt to dust return.

So judg'd he Man, both Judge and Saviour sent,

And th' instant stroke of Death denounc'd that day
 Remov'd far off; then pitying how they stood 215
 Before him naked to the aire, that now
 Must suffer change, disdain'd not to begin
 Thenceforth the form of servant to assume,
 As when he wash'd his servants feet so now 218
 As Father of his Family he clad
 Their nakedness with Skins of Beasts, or slain,
 Or as the Snake with youthful Coat repaid;
 And thought not much to cloath his Enemies:
 Nor he their outward only with the Skins 220
 Of Beasts, but inward nakedness much more
 Opprobrious, with his Robe of righteousness,
 Araying cover'd from his Father's sight.
 To him with swift ascent he up return'd,
 Into his blisful bosom reassum'd 225
 In glory as of old,* to him appeas'd,
 All, tho' all-knowing, what had past with Man
 Accounted, mixing intercession sweet.

Mean while e'er thus was sin'd and judg'd on Earth,
 Within the Gates of Hell fate Sin and Death, 230
 In counterview within the Gates, that now
 Stood open wide, belching outrageous flame
 Far into *Chaos*, since the Fiend pass'd through,
 Sin opening, who thus now to Death began.

O Son, why sit we here each other viewing 235
 Idlely, while Satan our great Author thrives
 In other Worlds, and happier Seat provides
 For us his Off-spring dear? It cannot be
 But this success attends him; if mishap,

Book X. PARADISE LOST. 295

For this he had return'd, with fury driv'n 240
By his Avengers, since no place like this
Can fit his punishment, or their revenge.
Methinks I feel new strength within me rise,
Things growing, and Dominion giv'n me large
Beyond this Deep; whatever draws me on, 245
Or sympathy, or some connatural force
Powerful at greatest distance to unite
With secret amity things of like kind
By secretest conveyance. Thou my Shade
Inseparable must with me along: 250

For Death from Sin no power can separate.
But lest the difficulty of passing back
Stay his return perhaps over this Gulf
Impassable, Impervious, let us try
Adventurous work, yet to thy power and mine 355
Not unagreeable, to found a path
Over this Main from Hell to that new World
Where Satan now prevails; a Monument
Of merit high to all th' infernal Host,
Easing their passage hence, for intercourse, 260
Or transmigration, as their lot shall lead.
Nor can I miss the way, so strongly drawn
By this new felt attraction and instinct.

Whom thus the meager Shadow answer'd soon,
Go: whither Fate and inclination strong 265
Leads thee, I shall not lag behind, nor err
The way, thou leading, such a scent I draw
Of carnage, prey innumerable, and taste
The favour of Death from all things there that live :

Nor shall I to the work thou enterprisest
Be wanting, but afford thee equal aid.

So saying, with delight he snuff'd the smell
Of mortal change on Earth. As when a flock
Of ravenous Fowl, though many a League remove
Against the day of Battel, to a Field,

Where Armies lye encamp't, come flying, hush'd
With scent of living Carcasses design'd

For death, the following day, in bloody fight
So scented the grim Feature, and upturn'd

His Nostrils wide into the murky Aine,
Sagacious of his Quarry from so far.

Then both from out Hell Gates into the waste
Wide Anarchy of Chaos damp and dark

Flew divers, and with Power (their Power was great)
Hovering upon the Waters; what they met

Solid or slimy, as in raging Sea

Toft up and down, together crowded drove
From each side shoaling towards the mouth of Hell.

As when two Polar Winds blowing adverse
Upon the Cronian Sea, together drive

Mountains of Ice, that stop th' imagin'd way
Beyond *Petsera* Eastward, to the rich

Cathaian Coast. The aggregated Soyle
Death with his Mace petrific, cold and dry,

As with a Trident smote, and fix'd as firm
As *Delos* floating once; the rest his look

Bound with *Gorgonian* rigor not to move,
And with *Asphaltic* slime; broad as the Gate,

Deep to the Roots of Hell the gather'd beach

They fasten'd, and the Mole immense wrought on 300
 Over the foaming deep high Arch, a Bridge
 Of length prodigious joyning to the Wall
 Immovable of this now fenceless world
 Accessit to Death; from hence a Passage broad,
 Smooth, easie, inoffensive down to Hell. 305
 So, if great things to small may be compar'd,
Kerxes, the Liberty of *Greece* to yoke,
 From *Susa* his *Memnonian* Palace high-
 Came to the Sea, and over *Hellespont*.
 Bridging his way, *Europe* with *Asia* joyn'd, 310
 And scourg'd with many a stroak th' indignant waves.
 Now had they brought the work by wondrous Art.
 Pontifical, a ridge of pendent Rock
 Over the vext Abyss, following the track
 Of *Satan*, to the self same place where he 315
 First lighted from his Wing, and landed safe
 From out of *Chaos* to the outside bare
 Of this round World: with Pins of Adamant
 And Chains they made all fast, too fast they made
 And durable; and now in little space 320
 The confines met of *Empyrean* Heav'n
 And of this World, and on the left hand Hell
 With long reach interpos'd; three sev'ral ways
 In sight, to each of these three places led.
 And now their way to Earth they had descry'd, 325
 To Paradise first tending, when behold
Satan in likeness of an Angel bright
 Betwixt the *Centaure* and the *Scorpion* bearing
 His *Zenith*, while the Sun in *Arids* rose:

Disguis'd he came, but those his Children dear 334
 Their Parent soon discern'd, though in disguise.
 He after *Eve* seduc'd, unminded slunk
 Into the Wood fast by, and changing shape
 To observe the sequel, saw his guileful act
 By *Eve*, though all unweeting, seconded 337
 Upon her Husband, saw their shame that sought
 Vain covertures; but when he saw descend
 The Son of God to judge them terrify'd
 He fled, not hoping to escape, but shun
 The present, fearing guilty what his wrath 340
 Might suddenly inflict; that past, return'd
 By Night, and listening where the hapless Pair
 Sate in their sad discourse, and various plaint,
 Thence gather'd his own doom, which understood
 Not instant, but of future time. With joy 345
 And tidings fraught to Hell he now return'd,
 And to the brink of *Chaos*, near the foot
 Of this new wondrous Pontifice, unhop'd
 Met who to meet him came, his Off-spring dear.
 Great joy was at their meeting, and at sight 350
 Of that stupendious Bridge his joy encreas'd.
 Long he admiring stood, till Sin, his fair
 Enchanting Daughter, thus the silence broke.

O Parent, these are thy magnific deeds,
 Thy Trophies, which thou view'st as not thine own,
 Thou art their Author and prime Architect: 356
 For I no sooner in my Heart divin'd,
 My Heart, which by a secret harmony
 Still moves with thine, join'd in connexion sweet,

What thou on Earth hadst prosper'd, which thy looks
 show also evidence, but straight I felt 361
 though distant from thee Worlds between, yet felt
 that I must after thee with this thy Son,
 Each fatal consequence unites us three:
 Hell could no longer hold us in her bounds, 365
 for this unvoyageable Gulf obscure
 Detrain from following thy illustrious track.
 Thou hast achiev'd our liberty, confin'd
 Within Hell Gates till now, thou us impower'd
 To fortifie thus far, and overlay 370
 With this portentous Bridge the dark Abyss.
 Thine now is all this World, thy virtue hath won
 What thy hands builded not, thy Wisdom gain'd
 With odds what War hath lost, and fully aveng'd
 Our foile in Heav'n; here thou shalt Monarch reign,
 There didst not; there let him still Victor sway, 376
 As Battel hath adjudg'd, from this new World
 Retiring, by his own doom alienated;
 And henceforth Monarchy with thee divide
 Of all things parted by th' Empyrean bounds, 380
 His Quadrature, from thy Orbicular World,
 Or try thee now more dang'rous to his Throne.

Whom thus the Prince of Darkness answer'd glad.
 Fair Daughter, and thou Son and Grandchild both,
 High proof ye now have giv'n to be the Race 385
 Of *Satan* (for I glory in the name,
 Antagonist of Heav'n's Almighty King)
 Amply have merited of me, of all
 Th' infernal Empire, that so near Heav'n's door

Triumphal with triumphal ~~ast~~ *hows* met, . . . 39
 Mine with this glorious Work, and made one Realm
 Hell and this World, one Realm, one Continent
 Of easie thorough-fare. Therefore, while I
 Descend through Darknes, on your Rode with *ea*
 To my associate Powers, them to acquaint . . . 39
 With these successes, and with them rejoyce,
 You two this way, among these numerous Orbs
 All yours, right down to Paradise descend;
 There dwell and Reign in blis, thence on the Earth
 Dominion exercise, and in the Aire, 40
 Chiefly on Man, sole Lord of all declar'd,
 Him first make sure your thrall, and lastly kill.
 My Substitutes I send ye, and Create.
 Plenipotent on Earth, of matchless might
 Issuing from me: on your joynt vigor now 40
 My hold of this new Kingdom all depends,
 Through Sin to Death expos'd by my exploit.
 If your joynt power prevailes, th' affairs of Hell
 No detriment need fear, go and be strong.

So saying he dismiss'd them, they with speed 41
 Their course through thickest Constellations held
 Spreading their hane; the blasted Stars lookt wan,
 And Planets, Planet-strook, real Eclips
 Then suffer'd. Th' other way *Satan* went down
 The Causey to Hell Gate; on either side 41
 Disparted *Chaos* over built exclaim'd,
 And with rebounding surge the bars assail'd,
 That scorn'd his indignation: through the Gate,
 Wide open and unguarded, *Satan* pass'd,

Book x. PARADISE LOST. 301

And all about found desolate; for those 420
 appointed to sit there, had left their charge,
 flown to the upper World; the rest were all
 far to th' inland retir'd, about the walls
 Of Pandemonium, City and proud seat
 Of Lucifer, so by allusion call'd, 425
 Of that bright Star to Satan paragon'd.
 There kept their watch the Legions, while the Grand
 In Council sat, solicitous what chance
 Might intercept their Emperor sent, so he
 Departing gave command, and they observ'd. 430
 As when the Tartar from his Russian Foe
 By Astracan over the Snowy Plains
 Retires, or Bactrian Sophy from the Horns
 Of Turkish Crescent, leaves all waste beyond
 The Realm of Aladule, in his retreat 435
 To Taurus or Casbeen. So these the late
 Heav'n-banish'd Host, left desert utmost Hell
 Many a dark League, reduc'd in careful Watch
 Round their Metropolis, and now expecting
 Each hour their great adventurer from the search 440
 Of Foreign Worlds: he through the midst unmark'd,
 In shew Plebeian Angel militant
 Of lowest order, past; and from the door
 Of that Plutonian Hall, invifible
 Ascended his high Throne, which under state 445
 Of richest texture spread, at th' upper end
 Was plac'd in regal lustre. Down a while
 He sat, and round about him saw unseen:
 At last as from a Cloud his fulgent head.

And shape Star bright appear'd, or brighter, clad
 With what permissive glory since his fall 451
 Was left him, or false glitter: All amaz'd
 At that so sudden blaze the *Stygian* throng
 Bent their aspect, and whom they wish'd beheld.
 Their mighty Chief return'd: loud was th'acclaim:
 Forth rush'd in haste the great consulting Peers, 456
 Rais'd from their Dark *Divan*, and with like joy
 Congratulant approach'd him, who with hand
 Silence, and with these words attention won.

Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Virtues, Powers,
 For in possession such, not only of right, 460
 I call ye and declare ye now, return'd
 Successful beyond hope, to lead ye forth
 Triumphant out of this infernal Pit
 Abominable, accurs'd, the house of woe, 465
 And Dungeon of our Tyrant: Now possess,
 As Lords, a spacious World, to our native Heaven
 Little inferiour, by my adventure hard
 With peril great achiev'd. Long were to tell
 What I have done, what suffer'd, with what pain
 Voyag'd th'unreal, vast, unbounded deep 471
 Of horrible confusion, over which
 By Sin and Death a broad way now is pav'd
 To expedite your glorious march; but I
 Toil'd out my uncouth passage, forc'd to ride 475
 Th'untractable Abyss, plung'd in the womb
 Of unoriginal *Night* and *Chaos* wild,
 That jealous of their secrets, fiercely oppos'd
 My journey strange, with clamorous uproar

Meeting Fate supreme; thence how I found 480
 The new created World, which fume in Heaven
 Long had foretold; a Fabrick wonderful
 Of absolute perfection, therein Man
 Had in a Paradise, by our exile
 Made happy: Him by fraud I have seduc'd 485
 From his Creator, and the more to increase
 Your wonder, with an Apple; he thereat
 Offended, worth your laughter, hath giv'n up
 Both his beloved Man, and all his World,
 To Sin and Death a prey, and so to us, 490
 Without our hazard, labour, or alarm,
 To range in, and to dwell, and over Man
 To rule, as over all he should have rul'd.
 True is, me also he hath judg'd, or rather
 He not, but the brute Serpent in whose shape 495
 Man I deceiv'd: that which to me belongs,
 An enmity, which he will put between
 Me and Mankind; I am to bruise his heel;
 His Seed, when is not set, shall bruise my head:
 A World who would not purchase with a bruise, 500
 Or much more grievous pain? Ye have th' account
 Of my performance: What remains, ye Gods,
 But up and enter now into full bliss.

So having said, a while he stood, expecting
 Their universal shout and high applause 505
 To fill his ear, when contrary he hears
 On all sides, from innumerable tongues
 A dismal universal hiss, the sound
 Of public scorn; he wonder'd, but not long

Had leisure, wond'ring at himself now more; 58
 His Visage drawn he felt to sharp and spare,
 His Arms clung to his Ribs, his Legs entwining
 Each other, till supplanted down he felt
 A monstrous Serpent on his Belly prone,
 Reluctant, but in vain, a greater power 59
 Now rul'd him, punisht in the shape he sin'd,
 According to his doom: he would have spoke,
 But hiss for hiss return'd with forked tongue
 To forked tongue, for now were all transform'd
 Alike, to Serpents all as accessories 60
 To his bold Riot: dreadful was the din
 Of hissing through the Hall, thick swarming now
 With complicated monsters head and tail,
 Scorpion and Asp, and *Amphisbana* dire,
Ceraſter horn'd, *Hydrus*, and *Ellops* deſear, 61
 And *Dipſas* (not so thick swarm'd once the Soil
 Bedropt with blood of *Gorgon*, or the Isle
Ophiuſa) but still greatest he the midst,
 Now Dragon grown, larger than whom the *Son*
 Ingender'd in the *Pythian* Vale on slime, 62
 Huge *Python*, and his Power no less he seem'd
 Above the rest still to retain; they all
 Him follow'd issuing forth to th' open Field,
 Where all yet left of that revolted Rout
 Heav'n-falln, in station stood or just array, 63
 Sublime with expectation when to see
 In Triumph issuing forth their glorious Chief;
 They saw, but other sight instead, a crowd
 Of ugly Serpents; horror on them fell,

A horrid sympathy; for what they saw, 540
 They felt themselves now changing; down their arms,
 Down fell both spear and shield; down they as fast,
 And the dire hills renew'd, and the dire form
 Bright by Contagion, like in punishment, 544
 In their crime. Thus was th' applause they meant,
 And so exploding hiss, triumph to shame [stood
 It on themselves from their own mouths. There
 Grove hard by, sprung up with this their change,
 As with who reigns above, to aggravate
 Their patience, laden with Fruit, like that 550
 Which grew in Paradise, the bait of Eve
 Set by the Tempter: on that prospect strange
 Their earnest Eyes they fix'd, imagining
 For one forbidden Tree a multitude
 Now ris'n, to work them further woe or shame; 555
 Yet parcht with scalding thirst and hunger fierce,
 Though to delude them sent, could not abstain,
 But on they roll'd in heaps, and up the Trees
 Climbing, fate thicker than the snaky locks
 That curl'd *Magara*: greedily they pluck'd 560
 The Frutage fair to fight, like that which grew
 Near that bituminous Lake where *Sodom* flam'd;
 This more delusive, not the touch, but taste
 Deceiv'd; they fondly thinking to allay
 Their appetite with gust, instead of Fruit 565
 Chew'd bitter Ashes, which th' offended taste
 With spattering noise rejected: oft they assay'd,
 Hunger and thirst constraining, drag'd as oft,
 With hatefullest disrelish writh'd their jaws

With foot and cinders fill'd; so oft they fell 57
 Into the same illusion, not as Man [plague]
 Whom they triumph'd once lapst. Thus were the
 And worn with Famine, long and ceaseless his,
 Till their lost shape permitted, they resum'd,
 Yearly enjoin'd, some say, to undergo 58
 This annual humbling certain number'd days,
 To dash their pride, and joy for Man seduc'd.
 However some tradition they dispers'd
 Among the Heathen of their purchase got,
 And Fabl'd how the Serpent, whom they call'd 59
Ophion with *Eurynome*, the wide
 Encroaching *Eve* perhaps, had first the rule
 Of high *Olympus*, thence by *Saturn* driv'n
 And *Ops*, e'er yet *Disaan* *Jove* was born.
 Mean while in Paradise the hellish pair 60
 Too soon arriv'd, *Sin* there in power before,
 Once actual, now in body, and to dwell
 Habitual habitant; behind her *Death*
 Close following pace for pace, not mounted yet
 On his pale Horse: to whom *Sin* thus began. 61

Second of *Satan* sprung, all conquering *Death*,
 What thinkst thou of our Empire now, tho' earn'd
 With travel difficult, not better far
 Than still at Hell's dark threshold to have face watch,
 Unnam'd, undreaded, and thy self half starv'd? 62

Whom thus the Sin-born Monster answer'd soon.
 To me, who with eternal Famine pine,
 Alike is Hell, or Paradise, or Heaven,
 There best, where most with ravin I may meet;

Each here, tho' plenteous, all too little seems 600
 Suff this Maw, this vast unhide-bound Corps.
 To whom th' incestuous Mother thus reply'd.
 On therefore on these Herbs, and Fruits, and Flours
 At first, on each Beast next, and Fish, and Fowle,
 Homely morsels, and whatever thing 605
 Since of Time mowes down, devour unspar'd,
 All in Man residing through the Race
 Thoughts, his looks, words, actions all infect,
 And season him thy last and sweetest prey.
 This said, they both betook them several ways, 610
 Each to destroy, or unimmortal make
 All kinds, and for destruction to mature
 Sooner or later; which th' Almighty seeing,
 From his transcendent Seat the Saints among,
 By those bright Orders utter'd thus his voice. 615
 See with what heat these Dogs of Hell advance
 To waste and havoc yonder World, which I
 Fair and good created, and had still
 Kept in the State, had not the folly of Man
 Led in these wasteful Furies, who impute 620
 Guilt to me; so doth the Prince of Hell
 And his Adherents, that with so much ease
 Suffer them to enter and possess
 A place so heav'nly, and conniving seem
 To gratifie my scornful Enemies, 625
 What laugh, as if transported with some fit
 Of Passion, I to them had quitted all,
 At random yielded up to their misrule;
 And know not that I call'd and drew them thither

My Hell-hounds, to lick up the draff and filth
 Which mans polluting Sin with taint hath shed-
 On what was pure, till cramm'd and gorg'd, night
 With suckt and glutted offal, at one sling
 Of thy victorious Arm, well-pleasing Son,
 Both *Sin*, and *Death*, and yawning *Grave* at
 Through *Chaos* hurl'd, obstruct the mouth of Hell
 For ever, and seal up his ravenous Jaws.
 Then Heav'n and Earth renew'd shall be made
 To sanctity that shall receive no stain :
 Till then the Curse pronounc'd on both precedes.

He ended, and the heav'nly Audience loud
 Sung *Halleluja*, as the sound of Seas,
 Through multitude that sung : Just are thy ways
 Righteous are thy Decrees on all thy Works ;
 Who can extenuate thee? Next, to the Son,
 Destin'd restorer of Mankind, by whom
 New Heav'n and Earth shall to the Ages rise,
 Or down from Heav'n descend. Such was their song
 While the Creator calling forth by name
 His mighty Angels gave them several charge, 61
 As sorted best with present things. The Sun
 Had first his precept so to move, so shine,
 As might affect the Earth with cold and heat
 Scarce tollerable, and from the North to call
 Decrepit Winter, from the South to bring 655
 Solstitial summers heat. To the blanc Moon
 Her office they prescrib'd, to th'other five
 Their planetary motions and aspects.
 In *Sextile*, *Square*, and *Trine*, and *Opposite*

vorious efficacy, and when to join 660
 ynod unbenign, and taught the fixt
 r influence malignant when to showre,
 ch of them rising with the Sun, or falling,
 ould prove tempestuous: To the Winds they set
 r corners, when with bluster to confound 665
 Aire, and Shoar, the Thunder when to roll
 n terror through the dark Aereal Hall.
 e say he bid his Angels turn ascanse
 e Poles of Earth twice ten degrees and more
 m the Suns Axle; they with labour push'd 670
 ilique the Centric Globe: Some say the Sun
 as bid turn Reins from th' Equinoctial Rode
 he distant breadth to *Taurus* with the Scav'n
 blantick Sisters, and the *Spartan* Twins
 to the *Tropic* Crab; thence down amain 675
 Leo and the *Virgin* and the *Scales*,
 a deep as *Capricorne*, to bring in change
 f Seasons to each Clime; else had the Spring
 rpetual smil'd on Earth with vernant Flours,
 Equal in Days and Nights, except to those 680
 Beyond the Polar Circles; to them Day
 Had unbenighted shon, while the low Sun
 To recompence his distance, in their sight
 Had rounded still th' *Horizon*, and not known
 Or East or West, which had forbid the Snow 685
 From cold *Estotiland*, and South as far
 Beneath *Magellan*. At that tasted Fruit
 The Sun, as from *Thyestean* Banquet, turn'd
 His course intended; else how had the World

Inhabited, though sinless, more than now,
 Avoided pinching cold and scorching heat?
 These changes in the Heav'ns, though slow, prod
 Like change on Sea and Land, sidental blast,
 Vapour, and Mist, and Exhalation hot,
 Corrupt and Pestilent: Now from the North
 Of *Norumbega*, and the *Samosed* shoar
 Bursting their brazen Dungeon, arm'd with ice
 And snow and haile and stormy gust and flaw,
Boreas and *Cacias* and *Argestes* loud
 And *Thrascias* rend the Woods and Seas up-urn; 7
 With adverse blast up-turns them from the South
Notus and *Afer* black with thundrous Clouds
 From *Serrationa*; thwart of these as fierce
 Forth rush the *Levant* and the *Ponent* Winds
Eurus and *Zephir* with their lateral noise, 7
Sirocco, and *Libeccio*. Thus began
 Outrage from lifeless things; but Discord first
 Daughter of Sin, among th'irrational,
 Death introduc'd through fierce antipathy: 7
 Beast now with Beast gan war, and Fowle with Fowle;
 And Fish with Fish; to graze the Herb all leaving
 Devour'd each other; nor stood much in awe
 Of Man, but fled him, or with count'nance grim
 Glar'd on him passing: these were from without
 The growing miseries, which *Adam* saw 715
 Already in part, though hid in gloomiest shade,
 To sorrow abandon'd, but worse felt within,
 And in a troubl'd Sea of passion tost,
 Thus to disburd'n sought with sad complaint,

O miserable of happy! is this the end 720
 of this new glorious World, and me so late
 the Glory of that Glory, who now become
 accurs'd of blessed, hide me from the face
 of God, whom to behold was then my height
 of happiness, yet well, if here would end 725
 the misery, I deserv'd it, and would bear
 my own deservings; but this will not serve;
 that I eat or drink, or shall beget,
 propagated curse. O voice once heard
 slightly, *Encrease and multiply*, 730
 how Death to hear! for what can I encrease
 or multiply, but curses on my head?
 Who of all Ages to succeed, but feeling
 the evil on him brought by me, will curse
 my Head, ill fare our Ancestor impure, 735
 for this we may thank *Adam*; but his thanks
 shall be the execration; so besides
 mine own that bide upon me, all from me
 shall with a fierce reflux on me redound,
 on me as on their natural center light 740
 heavy, though in their place. Oh fleeting joys
 Of Paradise, dear bought with lasting woes!
 Did I request thee, Maker, from my Clay
 To mould me Man, did I sollicite thee
 From darkness to promote me, or here place 745
 In this delicious Garden? as my Will
 Concur'd not to my being, it were but right
 And equal to reduce me to my dust,
 Desirous to resign, and render back

All I receiv'd, unable to perform
 Thy terms too hard, by which I was to hold
 The good I fought not. To the loss of that,
 Sufficient penalty, why hast thou added
 The sense of endless woes? inexplicable
 Thy Justice seems; yet to say truth, too late,
 I thus contest; then should have been refus'd
 These terms whatever, when they were propos'd
 Thou didst accept them; wilt thou enjoy the good
 Then cavil the conditions? and though God
 Made thee without thy leave, what if thy Son
 Prove disobedient, and reprov'd, retort,
 Whereof didst thou beget me? I fought it not?
 Wouldst thou admit for his contempt of thee
 That proud excuse? yet him not thy election,
 But natural necessity begot.
 God made thee of choice his own, and of his own
 To serve him, thy reward was of his grace,
 Thy punishment then justly is at his Will.
 Be it so, for I submit, his doom is fair,
 That dust I am, and shall to dust return:
 O welcome hour whenever! why delays
 His hand to execute what his Decree
 Fixt on this day? why do I overlive,
 Why am I mockt with death, and lengthen'd out
 To deathless pain? how gladly would I meet
 Mortality my sentence, and be Earth
 Insensible, how glad would lay me down
 As in my Mother's lap? there I should rest
 And sleep secure; his dreadful voice no more

Could Thunder in my ears, no fear of worse 780
 To me and to my off-spring would torment me
 With cruel expectation. Yet one doubt
 Hurries me still, lest all I cannot die,
 Lest that pure breath of Life, the Spirit of Man
 Which God inspir'd, cannot together perish 785
 With this corporeal Clod; then in the Grave,
 In some other dismal place who knows
 If I shall die a living death? O thought
 Horrid, if true! yet why? it was but breath
 Of Life that sinn'd; what dies but what had life 790
 And sin? the Body properly hath neither.
 All of me then shall die; let this appease
 The doubt, since human reach no further knows.
 Or though the Lord of all be infinite,
 His wrath also? be it, man is not so, 795
 At mortal doom'd. How can he exercise
 Wrath without end on Man whom Death must end?
 Can he make deathless Death? that were to make
 Strange contradiction, which to God himself
 Impossible is held, as Argument 800
 Of weakness, not of Power. Will he draw out,
 For angers sake, finite to infinite
 To punish'd man, to satisfy his rigour
 Satisfy'd never; that were to extend
 His Sentence beyond dust and Nature's Law, 805
 By which all Causes else according still
 To the reception of their matter act,
 Nor to th' extent of their own Sphere. But say
 That Death be not one stroke, as I suppos'd,

Bereaving sense, but endless misery
 From this day onward, which I feel begun
 Both in me, and without me, and so last
 To perpetuity; Ay me, that fear
 Comes thundring back with dreadful revolution
 On my defenceless head; both Death and I
 Am found. Eternal, and incorporate both,
 Nor I on my part single, in me all
 Posterity stands curst! Fair Patrimony
 That I must leave ye, Sons; O were I able
 To waste it all my self, and leave ye none!
 So disinherited how would ye bless
 Me now your curse! Ah, why should all mankind
 For one mans fault thus guiltless be condemn'd,
 If guiltless? But from me what can proceed,
 But all corrupt, both Mind and Will deprav'd,
 Not to do only, but to will the same
 With me? how can they then acquitted stand
 In sight of God? Him after all Disputes
 Forc'd I absolve: all my evasions vain,
 And reasonings, tho' thro' Mazes, lead me still
 But to my own conviction: first and last
 On me, me only, as the source and spring
 Of all corruption, all the blame lights due;
 So might the wrath. Fond wish! couldst thou suppose
 That burden heavier than the Earth to bear
 Than all the World much heavier, though divid
 With that bad Woman? Thus what thou desirest
 And what thou fearest, alike destroys all hope
 Of refuge, and concludes thee miserable

Beyond all past example and future, 840
 To *Satan* only like both crime and doom.
 O Conscience, into what Abyss of fears
 And horrors hast thou driv'n me; out of which
 I find no way, from deep to deeper plung'd!
 Thus *Adam* to himself lamented loud 845
 Through the still Night, not now, as e'er man felt,
 Wholsom and cool, and mild, but with black Ains
 Accompany'd, with damps and dreadful gloom,
 Which to his evil Conscience represented
 All things with double terror: on the Ground 850
 Outstretch'd he lay, on the cold ground, and oft
 Curs'd his Creation, Death as oft accus'd
 Of tardy execution, since denounc'd
 The day of his Offence. Why comes not Death,
 Said he, with one thrice acceptable stroke 855
 To end me? shall Truth fail to keep her word,
 Justice Divine not hasten to be just?
 But Death comes not at call, Justice Divine
 Mends not her slowest pace for prayers or cries.
 O Wood, O Fountains, Hillocks, Dales and Bowrs,
 With other echo late I taught your Shades 860
 To answer, and resound far other Song.
 Whom thus afflicted when sad *Eve* beheld,
 Desolate where the fate, approaching nigh,
 Soft words to his fierce passion she assay'd: 865
 But her with stern regard he thus repell'd.
 Out of my sight, thou Serpent, that name best
 Befits thee, with him leagu'd, thy self as false
 And hateful; nothing wants, but that thy shape,

Like his, and colour Serpentine may shew
 Thy inward fraud, to warn all Creatures from the
 Henceforth; lest that too heav'nly form, pretence
 To hellish falsehood, snare them. But for thee
 I had persisted happy, had not thy pride
 And wandering vanity, when least was safe,
 Rejected my forewarning, and disdain'd
 Not to be trusted, longing to be seen
 Though by the Devil himself, him overweening
 To over-teach, but with the Serpent meeting
 Fool'd and beguil'd, by him thou, I by thee,
 To trust thee from my side, imagin'd wise,
 Constant, mature, proof against all assaults,
 And understood not all was but a shew
 Rather than solid virtue, all but a Rib
 Crooked by nature, bent, as now appears,
 More to the part sinister from me drawn,
 Well if thrown out, as supernumerary
 To my just number found. O why did God,
 Creator wise, that peopl'd highest Heav'n
 With Spirits Masculine, create at last
 This novelty on Earth, this fair defect
 Of Nature, and not fill the World at once
 With Men as Angels without Feminine,
 Or find some other way to generate
 Mankind? this mischief had not then befall'n,
 And more that shall befall, innumerable
 Disturbances on Earth through Female snares,
 And straight conjunction with this Sex: for either
 He never shall find out his Mate; but such

As some misfortune brings him, or mistake, 900
 Or whom he wishes most shall seldom gain
 Through her perverseness, but shall see her gain'd
 By a far worse, or if the love, with-held
 By Parents, or his happiest choice too late
 Shall meet, already link'd and Wedlock-bound 905
 To a fell adversary, his hate or shame:
 Which infinite calamity shall cause

To human Life, and household peace confound.
 He added not, and from her turn'd, but Eve
 Not so repulst, with Tears that ceas'd not flowing,
 And tresses all disorder'd, at his feet 910
 Fell humble, and embracing them, besought
 His peace, and thus proceeded in her plaint.

Forake me not thus, *Adam*, witness Heav'n
 What love sincere, and reverence in my heart 915
 I bear thee, and unweeting have offended,
 Unhappily deceiv'd; thy suppliant
 I beg, and clasp thy knees; bereave me not,
 Whereon I live, thy gentle looks, thy aid,
 Thy counsel in this uttermost distress, 920
 My only strength and stay: forlorn of thee,
 Whither shall I betake me, where subsist?
 While yet we live, scarce one short hour perhaps,
 Between us two let there be peace, both joining,
 As join'd in injuries, one enmity 925
 Against a Foe by doom express assign'd us,
 That cruel Serpent: On me exercise not
 Thy hatred for this misery befall'n,
 On me already lost, me than thy self

More miserable; both have sinn'd, but thou 930
 Against God only, I against God and thee,
 And to the place of judgment will return,
 There with my cries importune Heav'n, that all
 The sentence from thy head remov'd may light
 On me, sole cause to thee of all this woe, 935
 Me me only just Object of his Ire.

She ended weeping, and her lowly plight,
 Immoveable till peace obtain'd from fault
 Acknowledg'd and deserv'd, in *Adam* wrought
 Commiseration; soon his heart relented 940
 Towards her, his life so late and sole delight,
 Now at his feet submissive in distress,
 Creature so fair his reconciliation seeking,
 His Counsel whom she had displeas'd, his aid;
 As one disarm'd, his anger all he lost, 945
 And thus with peaceful words uprais'd her soon.

Unwary, and too desirous, as before
 So now of what thou knowst not, who desir'st
 The punishment all on thy self; alas,
 Bear thine own first, ill-able to sustain 950
 His full wrath whose thou feel'st as yet least part,
 And my displeasure bear'st so ill. If Prayers
 Could alter high Decrees, I to that place
 Would speed before thee; and be louder heard,
 That on my head all might be visit'd, 955
 Thy frailty and infirmer Sex forgiv'n,
 To me committed and by me expos'd.
 But rise, let us no more contend, nor blame
 Each other, blam'd enough elsewhere, but strive

offices of Love, how we may light'n
each others burthen, in our share of woe;
Since this days Death denounc'd, if ought I see,
Will prove no sudden, but a slow-pac'd evil,
A long days-dying to augment our pain,
And to our Seed (O hapless Seed) deriv'd. 965
To whom thus *Eve*, recovering heart, reply'd.
Adam, by sad experiment I know
How little weight my words with thee can find,
Sound so erroneous, thence by just event
Proved so unfortunate; nevertheless, 970
Restor'd by thee, vile as I am, to place
Of new acceptance, hopeful to regain
Thy Love, the sole contentment of my heart
Living or dying, from thee I will not hide
What thoughts in my unquiet breast are ris'n, 975
Tending to some relief of our extreams,
Or end, though sharp and sad, yet tolerable,
As in our evils, and of easier choice.
If care of our descent perplex us most,
Which must be born to certain woe, devour'd 980
By Death at last, and miserable it is
To be to others cause of misery,
Our own begotten, and of our loins to bring
Into this cursed World a woful Race,
That after wretched Life must be at last 985
Food for so foul a Monster, in thy power
It lies, yet e'er Conception to prevent
The Race, unblest, to being yet unbegot.
Childless thou art, Childless remain:

So Death shall be deceiv'd his gins, and with us too
 Be forc'd to satisfy his Ravenous Maw.
 But if thou judge it hard and difficult,
 Converſing, looking, loving, to ſubſiſt
 From Love's due Rites, Nuptial embraces ſweet,
 And with deſire to languish without hope,
 Before the preſent object languishing
 With like deſire, which would be miſery
 And torment leſs than none of what we dread.
 Then both our ſelves and Seed at once to free
 From what we fear for both, let us make ſhort,
 Let us ſeek Death, or he not found, ſupply
 With our own hands his office on our ſelves;
 Why ſtand we longer ſhivering under fears,
 That ſhew no end but Death, and have the power,
 Of many ways to die the ſhorteſt chuſing,
 Deſtruction with deſtruction to deſtroy?

She ended here, or vehement deſpair
 Broke off the reſt; ſo much of Death her thoughts
 Had entertain'd, as dy'd her Checks with pale.
 But Adam with ſuch counſel nothing ſway'd,
 To better hopes his more attentive mind
 Labouring had rais'd, and thus to Eve reply'd.

Eve, thy contempt of life and pleaſure ſeems
 To argue in thee ſomething more ſublime
 And excellent than what thy mind concerns;
 But ſelf-deſtruction therefore ſought, reſutes
 That excellence thought in thee, and implies,
 Not thy contempt, but anguiſh and regret
 For loſs of life and pleaſure over-lov'd.

If thou covet Death, as utmost end 1010
 Of misery, for thinking to evade
 The penalty pronounc'd, doubt not but God
 Hath wiselier arm'd his vengeful ire than so
 To be forestall'd; much more I fear lest Death
 He snatch'd will not exempt us from the pain 1025
 We are by doom to pay; rather such acts
 Of contumacy will provoke the highest
 To make Death in us live: Then let us seek
 Some safer resolution, which methinks
 I have in view, calling to mind with heed 1030
 Part of our Sentence, that thy Seed shall bruise
 The Serpent's head; piteous amends, unless
 Be meant, whom I conjecture, our grand Foe
 Satan, who in the Serpent hath contriv'd
 Against us this deceit: to crush his head 1035
 Would be revenge indeed; which will be lost
 By Death brought on our selves, or Childless days
 Resolv'd as thou proposest; so our Foe
 Shall scape his punishment ordain'd, and we
 Instead shall double ours upon our heads. 1040
 No more be mention'd then of violence
 Against our selves, and wilful barrenness
 That cuts us off from hope, and favours only
 Rancour and pride, impatience and despite,
 Reluctance against God and his just yoke 1045
 Laid on our Necks. Remember with what mild
 And gracious temper he both heard and judg'd
 Without wrath or reviling; we expected
 Immediate dissolution, which we thought

Was meant by Death that day, when lo, to thee
 Pains only in Child-bearing were foretold; 1051
 And bringing forth; soon recompenc'd with joy,
 Fruit of thy Womb: On me the Curse aslope
 Glanc'd on the Ground, with labour I must earn
 My bread; what haunst Idleness had been worse;
 My labour will sustain me; and lest Cold 1056
 Or Heat should injure us, his timely care
 Hath unbesought provided, and his hands
 Cloath'd us unworthy, pitying while he judg'd;
 How much more, if we pray him, will his ear 1060
 Be open, and his heart to pity incline,
 And teach us further by what means to shun
 Th' inclement Seasons, Rain, Ice, Hail and Snow,
 Which now the Sky with various Face begins
 To shew us in the Mountain; while the Winds 1065
 Blow moist and keen, flattering the graceful locks
 Of those fair spreading Trees; which bids us seek
 Some better shroud; some better warmth to cherish
 Our Limbs benumm'd; e'er this dismal Star 1068
 Leave cold the Night, how we his gather'd beams
 Reflected, may with matter feed foment;
 Or by collision of two bodies grind.
 The Aire attrite to Fire, as late the Clouds
 Jostling or part with Winds rude in their flock 1074
 Tine the flant Lightning, whose thwart flame driv's
 Kindles the gummy bark of Fir and Pine, [down
 And sends a comfortable heat from far;
 Which might supply the Sun: such Fire to use,
 And what may else be remedy or cure.

to evils which our own misdeeds have wrought,
 He will instruct us praying, and of Grace 1081
 beseeching him, so as we need not fear
 To pass commodiously this life, sustain'd
 By him with many comforts, till we end
 In dust, our final rest and native home. 1085

What better can we do, than to the place
 Repairing where he judg'd us, prostrate fall
 Before him reverent, and there confess
 Humbly our faults, and pardon beg, with tears
 Watering the ground, and with our sighs the Aire
 Frequenting, sent from hearts contrite, in sign 1091
 Of sorrow unfeign'd, and humiliation meek.
 Undoubtedly he will relent and turn
 From his displeasure; in whose look serene,
 When angry most he seem'd and most severe, 1095
 What else but favour, grace, and mercy shon?

So spake our Father penitent, nor Eve
 Felt less remorse: they forthwith to the place
 Repairing where he judg'd them prostrate fell
 Before him reverent, and both confess'd 1100
 Humbly their faults, and pardon beg'd, with tears
 Watering the ground, and with their sighs the Aire
 Frequenting, sent from hearts contrite, in sign
 Of sorrow unfeign'd, and humiliation meek.

The End of the Tenth Book.



Paradise Lost.

BOOK XI.

The ARGUMENT.

The Son of God presents to his Father the Prayers of our first Parents now repenting, and intercedes for them: God accepts them, but declares that they can no longer abide in Paradise; sends Michael with a Band of Cherubim to possess them; but first to reveal to Adam future things: Michael's coming down. Adam shews to Eve certain ominous signs; he discerns Michael's approach, goes out to meet him: The Angel denounces their departure. Eve's Lamentation. Adam pleads, but submits: The Angel leads him up to the high Hill, sets before him in vision what shall happen till the Flood.



THUS they in lowliest plight repentant stood
 Praying, for from the Mercy-seat above
 Convenient Grace descending had remov'd
 The stony from their hearts, and made new flesh
 Regenerate grow instead, that sighs now breath'd
 Inutterable, which the Spirit of prayer
 Inspir'd, and wing'd for Heav'n with speedier flight
 Than loudest Oratory: yet their port
 Not of mean suitors, nor important less
 Seem'd their Petition, than when th'ancient Pair 10
 In Fables old, less ancient yet than these,
 Penelope and chaste *Pyrrha* to restore
 The Race of Mankind drown'd, before the Shrine
 Of *Themis* stood devout: To Heav'n their pray'rs
 Flew up, nor miss'd the way, by envious winds 15
 Down vagabond or frustrate: in they pass'd
 Dimensionless thro' Heav'nly dores; then clad
 With incense, where the Golden Altar fum'd,
 By their great Intercessor, came in sight
 Before the Father's Throne: Them the glad Son 20
 Representing, thus to intercede began.

See, Father, what first fruits on Earth are sprung
 From thy implanted Grace in Man, these Sighs
 And Prayers, which in this Golden Censer, mixt
 With Incense, I thy Priest before thee bring, 25
 Fruits of more pleasing favour from thy seed
 Sown with contrition in his heart, than those
 Which his own hand manuring all the Trees
 Of Paradise could have produc'd, e'er fall'n

From innocence. Now therefore bend thine ear 30
 To supplication, hear his sighs though mute;
 Unskilful with what words to pray, let me
 Interpret for him, me his Advocate-
 And propitiation, all his works on me
 Good or not good ingraft, my Merit those 35
 Shall perfect, and for these my Death shall pay.
 Accept me, and in me from these receive
 The smell of peace toward Mankind, let him live
 Before thee reconcil'd, at least his days
 Number'd, tho' sad, till Death, his doom (which
 To mitigate thus plead, not to reverse) 40
 To better life shall yield him, where with me
 All my redeem'd may dwell in joy and bliss,
 Made one with me as I with thee am one.

To whom the Father, without Cloud, serene. 45
 All thy request for Man, accepted Son,
 Obtain, all thy request was my Decree:
 But longer in that Paradise to dwell,
 The Law I gave to Nature him forbids:
 Those pure immortal Elements that know 50
 No gross, no unharmonious mixture foule,
 Eject him tainted now, and purge him off
 As a distemper, gross to aere as gross,
 And mortal food, as may dispose him best
 For dissolution wrought by Sin, that first 55
 Distemper'd all things, and of incorrupt
 Corrupted. I at first with two fair gifts
 Created him endow'd, with Happiness
 And Immortality: that fondly lost,

He other serv'd but to eternize woe; 60
 If I provided Death; so Death becomes
 A final remedy, and after Life
 I'd in sharp tribulation; and refin'd
 Faith and faithful works, to second Life,
 I'd in the renovation of the just, 65
 Assigns him up with Heav'n and Earth renew'd.
 Let us call to Synod all the Blest
 Bro' Heav'n's wide bounds; from them I will not hide
 My judgements, how with Mankind I proceed;
 How with pious Angels late they saw; 70
 And in their state, tho' firm, stood more confirm'd.
 He ended, and the Son gave signal high
 To the bright Minister that watch'd; he blew
 His Trumpet, heard in Orb since perhaps
 When God descended, and perhaps once more 75
 To sound at general Doom. Th' Angelic blast
 Fill'd all the Regions: from their blissful Bow'rs
 Of *Amarantin* Shade, Fountain or Spring,
 By the waters of Life, where-e'er they sat
 In fellowships of joy: the Sons of Light 80
 Hasten'd, resorting to the Summons high,
 And took their Seats; till from his Throne supreme
 Th' Almighty thus pronounc'd his sov'reign Will.
 O Sons, like one of us Man is become
 To know both Good and Evil, since his taste 85
 Of that defended Fruit; but let him boast
 His knowledge of Good lost; and Evil got,
 Happier, had it suffic'd him to have known
 Good by it self, and Evil not at all;

He sorrows now, repents, and prays contrary;
 My motions in him, longer than they move,
 His heart I know, how variable and vain
 Self-left. Left therefore his now bolder hand
 Reach also of the Tree of Life, and eat,
 And live for ever, dream at least to live;
 For ever, to remove him I decree,
 And send him from the Garden forth to Till
 The Ground whence he was taken, fitter soil.

Michael, this my behest have thou in charge,
 Take to thee from among the Cherubim
 Thy choice of flaming Warriors, lest the Fiend
 Or in behalf of Man, or to invade
 Vacant possession some new trouble raise:
 Haste thee, and from the Paradise of God
 Without remorse drive out the sinful Pair,
 From hallow'd ground th' unholy, and denounce
 To them and to their Progeny from thence
 Perpetual banishment. Yet lest they faint
 At the sad Sentence rigorously urg'd,
 For I behold them soften'd and with tears
 Bewailing their excess, all terror hide.
 If patiently thy bidding they obey,
 Dismiss them not disconsolate; reveal
 To *Adam* what shall come in future days,
 As I shall thee enlighten, intermix
 My Cov'nant in the woman's seed renew'd;
 So send them forth, tho' sorrowing, yet in peace;
 And on the East side of the Garden place,
 Where entrance up from *Eden* easiest climbs,

Cherubim watch, and of a Sword the flame 120
 Wide waving, all approach far off to fright,
 And guard all passage to the Tree of Life :
 First Paradise's entrance prove :
 To Spirits foul, and all my Trees their prey,
 Whose whole sto'n Fruit Man once more to delude.
 He ceas'd ; and th' Archangelic Pow'r prepar'd 126
 For swift descent, with him the Cohort bright
 Of warchful Cherubim ; four faces each
 Had, like a double Janus, all their shape
 Mangl'd with eyes more numerous than those 130
 Of Argus, and more wakeful than to drowse,
 Charm'd with Arcadian Pipe, the Past'ral Reed
 Of Hermes, or his opiate Rod. Mean while
 To salute the World with sacred Light
 Euseothea wak'd, and with fresh dews imbal'm'd 135
 The Earth, when Adam and first Matron Eve
 Had ended now their Orisons, and found
 Strength added from above, new hope to spring
 Out of despair, joy, but with fear yet linkt ;
 Which thus to Eve his welcome words renew'd. 140
 Eve, easily may Faith admit, that all
 The good which we enjoy, from Heav'n descends ;
 But that from us ought should ascend to Heav'n
 So prevalent as to concern the mind
 Of God high-blest, or to incline his will, 145
 Hard to belief may seem ; yet this will Prayers,
 Or one short sigh of human breath, up-born
 Ev'n to the seat of God. For since I saught
 By Prayer th'offended Deity to appease,

Kneel'd and before him humbl'd all my heart, 15
 Methought I saw him placable and mild,
 Bending his ease; persuasion in me grew
 That I was heard with favour; peace return'd
 Home to my Breast, and to my memory
 His promise, that thy Seed shall bruise our Foe; 20
 Which then not minded in dismay, yet now
 Assures me that the bitterness of death
 Is past, and we shall live. Whence Hail to thee,
 Eve rightly call'd, Mother of all Mankind,
 Mother of all things living, since by thee 25
 Man is to live, and all things live for Man.

To whom thus Eve with sad demeanour moan'd
 Ill worthy I such title should belong
 To me transgressor, who for thee ordain'd
 A help, became thy snare; to me reproach 30
 Rather belongs, distrust and all dispraise;
 But infinite in pardon was my Judge,
 That I who first brought Death on all, am grac'd
 The source of life; next favourable thou,
 Who highly thus to entitle me vouchsaf'st, 35
 Far other name deserving. But the Field
 To labour calls us now with sweat impos'd,
 Though after sleepless Night: for see the Morn,
 All unconcern'd with our unrest, begins 40
 Her rosie progress smiling; let us forth, 378
 I never from thy side henceforth to stray,
 Where-e'er our days work lyes, though now enjoin'd
 Laborious, till day droop; while here we dwell,
 What can be tedious in these pleasant Walks?

let us live, though in fall'n state, content. 180
 so spake, so with'd much-humbl'd Eve, but Fate
 scrib'd not; Nature first gave Signs, impress
 Bird, Beast, Aire, Aire suddenly eclips'd
 her short blush of Morn; nigh in her sight
 Bird of Jove, stoop'd from his aery tour, 185
 so Birds of gayest plume before him drove:
 down from a Hill the Beast that reigns in Woods,
 swift hunter then, pursu'd a gentle brace,
 goodliest of all the Forest, Hart and Hinde;
 next to th'Eastern Gate was bent their flight. 190
 Adam observ'd, and with his Eye the chase
 pursuing, not unmov'd to Eve thus spake.
 And Eve, some further change awaits us nigh,
 which Heav'n by these mute signs in Nature shews
 Her runners of his purpose, or to warn 195
 haply too secure of our discharge
 from penalty, because from death releas'd
 some days; how long, and what till then our
 Who knows, or more than this, that we are doom'd,
 and thither must return and be no more. 200
 Why else this double object in our sight
 Of flight pursu'd in th'Aire and o'er the ground
 One way the self-same hour? why in the East
 Darkness e'er Days mid-course, and Morning light
 More orient in yon Western Clouds that draws 205
 O'er the blew Firmament a radiant white,
 And slow descends, with something heav'nly fraught.
 He err'd not, for by this the heav'nly Bands
 Down from a Sky of Jasper lighted now

In Paradise, and on a Hill made alt,
 A glorious Apparition, had not doubt
 And carnal fear that day dimm'd *Adam's* eye.
 Nor that more glorious, when the Angels met
Jacob in *Mahanaim*, where he saw
 The field Pavilion'd with his Guardians bright;
 Nor that which on the flaming Mount appear'd,
 In *Dothan*, cover'd with a Camp of Fire,
 Against the *Syrian* King, who to surprize
 One Man, Assassine like, had levied War,
 War unproclaim'd. The Princely Hierarch
 In their bright stand, there left his Pow'rs to fee
 Possession of the Garden; he alone,
 To find where *Adam* shelter'd, took his way,
 Not unperceiv'd of *Adam*, who to *Eve*,
 While the great Visitant approach'd, thus spake. 22

Eve, now expect great tidings, which perhaps
 Of us will soon determine, or impose
 New Laws to be observ'd; for I descry
 From yonder Blazing Cloud that veils the Hill
 One of the heav'nly Host, and by his Gate 23
 None of the meanest, some great Potentate
 Or of the Thrones above, such Majesty
 Invests him coming; yet not terrible,
 That I should fear, nor sociably mild,
 As *Raphael*, that I should much confide, 235
 But solemn and sublime, whom not t'offend;
 With reverence I must meet, and thou retire.
 He ended; and th' Arch-Angel soon drew nigh,
 Not in his shape Celestial, but as Man

To meet Man; over his lucid Arms 240
 Military Vest of purple flow'd
 Elier than *Melibæan*, or the grain
Serra, worn by Kings and Heroes old
 Time of truce; *Iris* had dipt the wooff;
 Starry Helm unbuckl'd shew'd him prime 245
 Manhood where Youth ended; by his side
 In a glittering *Zodiac* hung the Sword,
 In's dire dread, and in his hand the Spear.
 Sam bow'd low, he Kingly from his State
 An'd not, but his coming thus declar'd. 250
 Adam, Heav'n's high behest no Preface needs:
 Efficient that thy Prayers are heard, and Death,
 When due by sentence when thou didst transgress,
 Seated of his seizure many days 254
 In thee of Grace, wherein thou mayst repent,
 And one bad Act with many Deeds well done
 Layst cover: well may then thy Lord appeas'd
 Redeem thee quite from Death's rapacious claim;
 No longer in this Paradise to dwell
 Remits not; to remove thee I am come, 260
 And send thee from the Garden forth to till
 The ground whence thou wast tak'n, fitter Soils
 He added not, for *Adam* at the news
 Heart-struck with chilling gripe of sorrow stood,
 That all his senses bound; *Eve*, who unseen 265
 Yet all had heard; with audible lament
 Discover'd soon the place of her retire.
 O unexpected stroke, worse than of Death!
 Must I thus leave thee, Paradise? thus leave

Thee, Native Soile, these happy Walks and Shade
 Fit haunt of Gods? where I had hope to spend
 Quiet, though sad, the respite of that day
 That must be mortal to us both. O flow'rs,
 That never will in other Climate grow,
 My early visitation, and my last
 At Ev'n, which I bred up with tender hand
 From the first op'ning bud, and gave you Name
 Who now shall rear you to the Sun, or rank
 Your Tribes, and water from th' ambrosial Fount
 Thee lastly, nuptial Bowre, by me adorn'd
 With what to sight or smell was sweet; from
 How shall I part, and whither wander down
 Into a lower World, to this obscure
 And wild, how shall we breathe in other Aire
 Less pure, accusom'd to immortal Fruits?

Whom thus the Angel interrupted mild.
 Lament not, *Eve*, but patiently resign
 What justly thou hast lost; nor set thy heart,
 Thus over-fond, on that which is not thine;
 Thy going is not lonely, with thee goes
 Thy Husband, him to follow thou art bound;
 Where he abides, think there thy native soil.

Adam by this from the cold sudden damp
 Recovering, and his scatter'd spirits return'd,
 To *Michael* thus his humble words address'd:

Celestial, whether among the Thrones, or near
 Of them the Highest, for such of shape may be
 Prince above Princes, gently hast thou told
 Thy Message, which might else in telling wound

and in performing end us; what besides
 Sorrow and dejection and despair
 our frailty can sustain, thy tidings bring,
 departure from this happy place, our sweet
 excess, and only consolation left
 familiar to our eyes, all places else
 inhospitable appear and desolate. 305

For knowing us nor known: and if by prayer
 incessant I could hope to change the will
 of him who all things can, I would not cease
 to weary him with my assiduous cries: 310

but prayer against his absolute Decree
 no more avails than breath against the wind,
 blown stifling back on him that breaths it forth:
 therefore to his great bidding I submit.

This most afflicts me, that departing hence, 315
 As from his face I shall be hid, depriv'd

His blessed count'nance; here I could frequent,
 With worship, place by place where he vouchsaf'd
 Presence Divine, and to my Sons relate;

On this Mount he appear'd, under this Tree 320
 Stood visible, among these Pines his voice

I heard, here with him at this Fountain talk'd:

So many grateful Altars I would rear
 Of grassie Turfe, and pile up every Stone
 Of lustre from the brook, in memory, 325

Or monument to Ages, and thereon
 Offer sweet smelling Gums and Fruits and Flow'rs:
 In yonder nether World where shall I seek
 His bright appearances, or foot-step trace?

For though I fled him angry, yet recall'd
To life prolong'd and promis'd Race, I now
Gladly behold though but his utmost skirts
Of glory, and far off his steps adore.

To whom thus *Michael* with regard benign.
Adam, thou know'st Heav'n his, and all the Earth
Not this Rock only; his Omnipresence fills
Land, Sea, and Aire, and every kind that lives,
Fomented by his virtual power and warm'd:
All th' Earth he gave thee to possess and rule,
No despicable gift; surmise not then
His presence to these narrow-bounds confin'd
Of Paradise or *Eden*: this had been
Perhaps thy Capital Seat, from whence had spread
All generations, and had thither come
From all the ends of th' Earth, to celebrate
And reverence thee their great Progenitor.
But this pre-eminence thou hast lost, brought down
To dwell on even ground now with thy Sons:
Yet doubt not but in Valley and in plain
God is as here, and will be found alike
Present, and of his presence many a sign
Still following thee, still compassing thee round
With goodness and paternal Love, his Face
Express, and of his steps the track Divine.
Which that thou may'st believe, and be confirm'd
E'er thou from hence depart, know I am sent
To shew thee what shall come in future days
To thee and to thy Off-spring; good with bad
Expect to hear, supernal Grace contending

With sinfulness of Men; thereby to learn 360
 True patience, and to temper joy with fear
 And pious sorrow, equally enur'd
 By moderation either state to bear,
 Prosperous or adverse: so shalt thou lead
 Best thy life, and best prepar'd endure 365
 Thy mortal passage when it comes. Ascend
 This Hill; let *Eve* (for I have drencht her eyes)
 Here sleep below while thou to foresight wak'st,
 As once thou slep'st, while she to life was form'd.
 To whom thus *Adam* gratefully reply'd. 370
 Ascend, I follow thee, safe Guide, the path
 Thou lead'st me, and to the hand of Heav'n submit,
 However chaff'ning, to the evil turn
 My obvious breast, arming to overcome
 My suffering, and earn rest from labour won, 375
 If so I may attain. So both ascend
 In the Visions of God: It was a Hill
 Of Paradise the highest, from whose top
 The Hemisphere of Earth in clearest Ken
 Stretcht out to th'amplest reach of prospect lay. 380
 Not higher that Hill nor wider looking round,
 Whereon for different cause the Tempter set
 Our second *Adam* in the Wilderness,
 To shew him all Earth's Kingdoms and their Glory.
 His Eye might there command whatever stood 385
 City of old or modern Fame, the Seat
 Of mightiest Empire, from the destin'd Walls
 Of *Cambalu*, seat of *Cathayan Can*
 And *Samarchand* by *Oxus*, *Temirs* Throne,

To *Paquin* of *Sinaan* Kings, and thence 190
 To *Agra* and *Laber* of great *Mogul*
 Down to the golden *cherfonese*, or where
 The *Persian* in *Ecbatan* fate, or since
 In *Histahan*, or where the *Russian* *Ksar*
 In *Mosco*, or the *Sultan* in *Bizance*, 195
Turcheſtan-born; nor could his eye not ken
 Th' Empire of *Negus* to his utmoſt Port
Ereco and the leſs *Maritim* Kings
Mombaza, and *Quilon*, and *Melind*,
 And So alſo thought *Ophir*, to the Realm 400
 Of *Congo*, and *Angola* fartheſt South;
 Or thence from *Niger* Flood to *Atlas* Mount
 The Kingdoms of *Almanſor*, *Fex* and *Sus*,
Morocco and *Algiers*, and *Tremiſen*;
 On *Europe* thence, and where *Rome* was to ſway 405
 The World: in Spirit perhaps he alſo ſaw
 Rich *Mexico* the ſeat of *Montezume*,
 And *Cuſco* in *Peru*, the richer ſeat
 Of *Atabalipa*, and yet unſpoil'd
Guiana, whoſe great City *Geryans* Sons 410
 Call *El Dorado*: but to nobler ſights
Michael from *Adam*'s eyes the Filme remov'd
 Which that falſe Fruit that promis'd clearer ſight
 Had bred; then purg'd with *Euphraſie* and *Rue*
 The viſual Nerve, for he had much to ſee; 415
 And from the Well of Life three drops inſtill'd.
 So deep the power of theſe Ingredients pierc'd,
 Even to the Inmoſt ſeat of mental ſight,
 That *Adam* now enforc'd to cloſe his eyes,

Sink down and all his Spirits became intrans'd: 410
 But him the gentle Angel by the hand
 Soon rais'd, and his attention thus recall'd.

Adam, now ope thine eyes, and first behold
 Th' effects which thy original crime hath wrought
 Some to spring from thee, who never touch'd 420
 Th' excepted Tree, nor with the Snake conspir'd,
 Nor sinn'd thy sin, yet from that derive
 Corruption to bring forth more violent deeds.

His eyes he open'd, and beheld a field,
 Part arable and tilth, whereon were Sheaves 430
 New reapt, the other part sheep-walks and foulds;
 T' th' midst an Altar as the Land-mark stood
 Rustic, and grassie ford; thither anon
 A sweaty Reaper from his Tillage brought
 First Fruits, the green Ear, and the yellow Sheaf,
 Uncull'd, as came to hand; a Shepherd next 436
 More meek came with the Firstlings of his Flock
 Choicest and best; then sacrificing, laid
 The Inwards and their Fat, with Incense strew'd,
 On the cleft Wood, and all due Rites perform'd. 440
 His Off'ring soon propitious Fire from Heav'n
 Consum'd with nimble glance, and grateful Steam;
 The others not, for his was not sincere:
 Whereat he inly rag'd, and as they talk'd,
 Smote him into the Midriff with a stone 445
 That beat out life; he fell, and deadly pale
 Groan'd out; his Soul with gushing blood effus'd.
 Much at the sight was *Adam* in his heart
 Dismay'd, and thus in haste to th' Angel cry'd.

O Teacher, some great mischief hath befall'n 459
 To that meek man, who well had sacrific'd;
 Is Piety thus and pure Devotion paid?

T'whom *Michael* thus, he also mov'd, reply'd
 These two are Brethren, *Adam*, and to come
 Out of thy loyns; th'unjust the just hath slain, 460
 For envy that his Brother's Offering found
 From Heav'n acceptance; but the bloody Fact
 Will be aveng'd, and th'others faith approv'd
 Lose no reward, though here thou see him die,
 Rolling in dust and gore. To which our Sir. 461

Alas, both for the deed and for the cause!
 But have I now seen Death? Is this the way
 I must return to native dust? O sight
 Of terror, foul and ugly to behold,
 Horrid to think, how horrible to feel! 462

To whom thus *Michael*. Death thou hast seen
 In his first shape on man; but many shapes
 Of Death, and many are the ways that lead
 To his grim Cave, all dismal; yet to sense
 More terrible at th'entrance than within. 463

Some, as thou saw'st, by violent stroke shall die,
 By Fire, Flood, Famine, by Intemperance more
 In Meats and Drinks, which on the Earth shall bring
 Diseases dire, of which a monstrous crew
 Before thee shall appear; that thou mayst know 464
 What misery th'inabstinence of *Eve*

Shall bring on men. Immediately a place
 Before his eyes appear'd, sad, noysom, dark,
 A Lazar-house it seem'd, wherein were laid

Members of all diseas'd, all maladies 480
 Of gasty Spasm, or racking torture, qualmes
 Of heart-sick Agony, all feavorous kinds,
 Convulsions, Epilepsies, fierce Catarrhs,
 Obstin Stone and Ulcer, Colic pangs,
 Moniac Phrenzy, moaping Melancholy 485
 And Moon-struck madness, pining Atrophy,
 Larasmus, and wide-wasting Pestilence,
 Dropsies, and Asthma's, and Joint-racking Rheums.
 None was the tossing, deep the groans, despair
 Led the sick busiest from Couch to Couch; 490
 And over them triumphant Death his Dart
 Took, but delay'd to strike, though oft invoc'd
 With vows, as their chief good, and final hope.
 Might so deform what heart of Rock could long
 Eye'd behold? Adam could not, but wept, 495
 Though not of Woman born; compassion quell'd
 His best of Man, and gave him up to tears
 Space, till firmer thoughts restrain'd excess,
 And scarce recovering words his plaint renew'd.
 O miserable Mankind, to what fall 500
 Degraded, to what wretched state reserv'd!
 What end here unborn. Why is life giv'n
 To be thus wrested from us? rather why
 Intruded on us thus? who if we knew
 What we receive, would either not accept 505
 Life offer'd; or soon beg to lay it down,
 Glad to be so dismiss'd in peace. Can thus
 Th' Image of God in man created once
 So goodly and erect, though faulty since,

To such unfightly sufferings be debas'd 519
 Under inhuman pains? Why should not Man,
 Retaining still Divine similitude
 In part, from such deformities be free,
 And for his Maker's Image sake exempt?

Their Maker's Image, answer'd Michael, then 520
 Forsook them, when themselves they vili'd
 To serve ungovern'd appetite, and took
 His Image whom they serv'd, a brutish vice,
 Inductive mainly to the sin of Eve.

Therefore so abject is their punishment, 521
 Disfiguring not God's likeness, but their own,
 Or if his likeness, by themselves defac'd
 While they pervert pure Natures healthful rules
 To loathsome sickness, worthily, since they
 God's Image did not reverence in themselves. 522

I yield it just, said Adam, and submit,
 But is there yet no other way, besides
 These painful passages, how we may come
 To Death, and mix with our conspurial dust?

There is, said Michael, if thou well observe 523
 The rule of not too much, by temperance taught
 In what thou eat'st and drink'st, seeking from them
 Due Nourishment, no glutinous delight,
 Till many years over thy head return:
 So may'st thou live, till like ripe Fruit thou drop'st
 Into thy Mother's lap, or be with ease

Gather'd, not harshly pluck'd, for Death mature:
 This is old Age; but then thou must outlive
 Thy youth, thy strength, thy beauty, which will change

To wither'd, weak and gray; thy Senses then 540
 Obuse, all taste of pleasure must forgo,
 To what thou hast, and for the Aire of youth
 Hopeful and chearful, in thy blood will reign
 A melancholy damp of cold and dry
 To weigh thy Spirits down, and last consume 545
 The Balm of Life. To whom our Ancestor.

Henceforth I fly not Death, nor would prolong
 Life much, bent rather how I may be quit
 Fairest and easiest of this combrous charge,
 Which I must keep till my appointed day 550
 Of rendring up, and patiently attend
 My dissolution. *Michael* reply'd.

Nor love thy Life, nor hate; but what thou liv'st
 Live well, how long or short permit to Heav'n:
 And now prepare thee for another fight. 555

He look'd and saw a spacious Plain, whereon
 Were Tents of various hue; by some were herds
 Of Cattle grazing; others, whence the sound
 Of Instruments that made melodious chime
 Was heard, of Harp and Organ; and who mov'd 560
 Their steps and chords was seen: his volant touch
 Instinct through all proportions low and high
 Fled and pursu'd transverse the resonant fugue.
 In other part stood one who at the Forge
 Labouring, two massie clods of Iron and Brass 565
 Had melted (whether found where casual fire
 Had wasted Woods on Mountain or in Vale,
 Down to the veins of Earth, thence gliding hot
 To some Caves mouth, or whether wash'd by Streams

From underground) the liquid Ore he drain'd 570
 Into fit moulds prepar'd; from which he form'd
 First his own Tools; then, what might else be wrought
 Fulfil or grav'n in metal. After these,
 But on the hither side a different sort
 From the high neighbouring Hill, which was their Seat,
 Down to the Plain descended: by their guise 575
 Just men they seem'd, and all their study bent
 To worship God aright, and know his works
 Not hid, nor those things last which might preserve
 Freedom and Peace to men: they on the Plain 580
 Long had not walk'd, when from the Tents behold
 A Bevy of fair Women, richly gay
 In Gems and wanton dress; to the harp they sung
 Soft amorous Ditties, and in dance came on:
 The Men tho' grave, ey'd them, and let their eyes 585
 Rove without rein, till in the amorous Net
 First caught, they lik'd, and each his liking chose;
 And now of Love they treat till th' Evening Star
 Love's Harbinger appear'd; then all in heat
 They light the Nuptial Torch, and bid invoke 590
Hymen, then first to marriage Rites invok'd:
 With Feast and Musick all the Tents resound.
 Such happy interview and fair event
 Of love and youth not lost, Songs, Garlands, Flow'rs,
 And charming Symphonies attach'd the heart 595
 OF *Adam*, soon inclin'd t' admit delight,
 The bent of Nature; which he thus express.

True opener of mine eyes, prime Angel-blest,
 Much better seems this Vision, and more hope

Of peaceful days portends, than those two past; 600
Those were of hate and death, or pain much worse,
Here Nature seems fulfill'd in all her ends.

To whom thus *Michael*, Judge not what is best
By pleasure, though to Nature seeming meet,
Created, as thou art, to nobler end 605
Holy and pure, conformity divine.

Those Tents thou saw'st so pleasant, were the Tents
Of wickedness, wherein shall dwell his Race
Who slew his Brother; studious they appear
Of Arts that polish Life, Inventors rare, 610

Unmindful of their Maker, though his Spirit
Taught them, but they his gifts acknowledg'd none.
Yet they a beauteous Off-spring shall beget;
For that fair Female Troop thou saw'st, that seem'd
Of Goddesses, so blithe, so smooth, so gay, 615
Yet empty of all good wherein consists

Woman's domestick honour and chief praise;
Bred only and compleated to the taste
Of lustful appetite, to sing, to dance,
To dress, and trouble the tongue, and roll the Eye.
To these that sober Race of Men, whose lives 620
Religious tirl'd them the Sons of God,
Shall yield up all their virtue, all their fame
Ignobly, to the trains and to the smiles

Of these fair Atheists, and now swim in joy, 625
(E'erlong to swim at large) and laugh; for which
The world e'erlong a world of tears must weep.

To whom thus *Adam* of short joy bereft.
O pity and shame, that they who to live well

346 PARADISE LOST Book XI.

Enter'd so fair, should turn aside to tread 630
 Paths indirect, or in the mid way faint!
 But still I see the tenour of Man's woe
 Holds on the same, from Woman to begin.

From Man's effeminate slackness it begins,
 Said th' Angel, who should better hold his place 635
 By wisdom, and superior gifts receiv'd.
 But now prepare thee for another Scene.

He look'd and saw wide Territory spread
 Before him, Towns, and Rural works between,
 Cities of Men with lofty Gates and Tow'rs, 640
 Concourse in Arms, fierce Faces threatening War,
 Giants of mighty Bone, and bold emprise;
 Part wield their Arms, part curb the foaming Steed,
 Single or in Array of Battle rang'd
 Both Horse and Foot, nor idly mustering stood;
 One way a Band select from forage drives 645
 A Herd of Beeves, fair Oxen and fair Kine
 From a fat Meadow ground; or fleecy Flock,
 Ewes and their bleating Lambs over the Plain
 Their Booty; scarce with Life the Shepherds fly,
 But call in aid, which makes a bloody Fray; 650
 With cruel Tournament the Squadrons join;
 Where Cattle pastur'd late, now scatter'd lyes
 With Carcasses and Arms th' ensanguin'd Field
 Deserted: Others to a City strong 655
 Lay Siege, encamp'd; by Battery, Scale, and Mine,
 Assaulting; others from the wall defend
 With Dart and Jav'lin, Stones and sulph'rous Fire;
 On each hand slaughter and gigantic deeds.

Book XI. PARADISE LOST: 347

In other part the scepter'd Heralds call 660

To Council in the City Gates: anon

Grey-headed men and grave, with Warriors mix'd,

Assamble, and Harangues are heard, but soon

In factious opposition, till at last

Of middle Age one rising, eminent 665

In wise deport, spake much of Right and wrong,

Of Justice, of Religion, Truth and Peace,

And Judgement from above: him old and young

Exploded and had seiz'd with violent hands,

Had not a Cloud descending snatch'd him thence 670

Unseen amid the throng; so violence

Proceeded, and Oppression, and Sword-Law

Through all the Plain, and refuge none was found.

Adam was all in tears, and to his guide

Lamenting turn'd full sad; O what are these, 675

Death's Ministers, not Men, who thus deal Death

Inhumanly to men, and multiply

Ten thousandfold the sin of him who slew

His Brother: for of whom such massacre

Make they but of their Brethren, men of men? 680

But who was that Just Man, whom had not Heav'n

Rescu'd, had in his Righteousness been lost?

To whom thus *Michael*. These are the product

Of those ill mated marriages thou saw'st:

Where good with bad were match'd, who of themselves

Abhor to joyn: and by imprudence mix'd, 686

Produce prodigious Birth of Body or Mind.

Such were these Giants, men of high renown;

For in those days Might only shall be admir'd,

And Valour and Heroic Virtue call'd; 690
 To overcome in Battel, and subdue
 Nations, and bring home spoils with infinite
 Man-slaughter, shall be held the highest pitch
 Of human Glory, and for Glory done
 Of triumph, to be styl'd great Conquerors, 695
 Patrons of Mankind, Gods, and Sons of Gods,
 Destroyers rightlier call'd and Plagues of men.
 Thus Fame shall be atchiev'd, renown on Earth,
 And what most merits fame in silence hid.
 But he the seventh from thee, whom thou beheldst
 The only righteous in a World perverse, 700
 And therefore hated, therefore so beset
 With Foes for daring single to be just,
 And utter odious Truth, that God would come
 To judgethem with his saints: Him the most High
 Rapt in a balmy Cloud with winged Steeds 705
 Did, as thou sawst, receive, to walk with God
 High in Salvation and the Climes of bliss,
 Exempt from Death; to shew thee what reward
 Awaits the good, the rest what punishment? 710
 Which now direct thine eyes and soon behold.

He look'd, and saw the face of things quite chang'd,
 The brazen Throat of War had ceas'd to roar,
 All now was turn'd to jollity and game,
 To luxury and riot, feast and dance, 715
 Marrying or prostituting, as beset
 Rape or Adultery, where passing fair
 Allur'd them; thence from Cups to civil Broils.
 At length a Reverend Sire among them came,

And of their doings great dislike declar'd, 720
 And testify'd against their ways; he oft
 frequented their Assemblies, where so met,
 Triumphs or Festivals, and to them preach'd
 Conversion and Repentance, as to Souls
 In Prison under Judgements imminent: 725
 But all in vain: which when he saw, he ceas'd
 Contending, and remov'd his Tents far off;
 Then from the Mountain hewing Timber tall,
 Began to build a Vessel of huge bulk, 729
 Measur'd by Cubit, length, and breadth, and height,
 Smear'd round with Pitch, and in the side a door
 Contriv'd, and of provisions laid in large
 For Man and Beast: when lo a wonder strange!
 Of every Beast, and Bird, and Insect small 734
 Came sevens, and pairs, and enter'd in, as taught
 Their order: last the Sire, and his three Sons
 With their four Wives; and God made fast the door.
 Mean while the Southwind rose, and with black wings
 Wide hovering, all the Clouds together drove
 From under Heav'n; the Hills to their supply 740
 Vapour, and Exhalation dusk and moist,
 Sent up amain; and now the thicken'd Sky
 Like a dark Ceiling stood; down rush'd the Rain
 Impetuous, and continu'd till the Earth
 No more was seen; the floating Vessel swum 745
 Uplifted; and secure with beaked prow
 Rode tilting o'er the Waves, all dwellings else
 Flood overwhelm'd, and them with all their pomp

Deep under water roll'd; Sea cover'd Sea;
 Sea without shoar; and in their Palaces 750
 Where luxury late reign'd, Sea-monsters whelp'd
 And stabl'd; of Mankind, so numerous late,
 All left, in one small bottom swum imbark'd.
 How didst thou grieve then, *Adam*, to behold
 The end of all thy Off-spring, end so sad, 755
 Depopulation; thee another Flood,
 Of tears and sorrow a Flood thee also drown'd,
 And sunk thee as thy Sons; till gently rear'd
 By th'Angel, on thy feet thou stoodst at last,
 Tho' comfortless, as when a Father mourns 760
 His Children, all in view destroy'd at once;
 And scarce to th'Angel utter'dst thus thy plaint.

O Visions ill foreseen! better had I
 Liv'd ignorant of future, so had born
 My part of evil only, each days lot 765
 Enough to bear; those now, that were dispens'd
 The burd'n of many Ages, on me light
 At once, by my foreknowledge gaining Birth
 Abortive, to torment me e'er their being,
 With thought that they must be. Let no man seek
 Henceforth to be foretold what shall befall 770
 Him or his Children, evil he may be sure,
 Which neither his foreknowing can prevent,
 And he the future evil shall no less
 In apprehension than in substance feel 775
 Grievous to bear: but that care now is past,
 Man is not whom to warn: those few escap'd.

Min and anguish will at last consume
 Landring that watry Desert: I had hope
 When violence was ceas'd, and War on Earth, 780
 It would have then gone well, peace would have
 Given length of happy days the race of man; [crown'd
 But I was far deceiv'd; for now I see
 Peace to corrupt no less than War to waste.
 How comes it thus? unfould, Celestial Guide, 785
 And whether here the Race of man will end.
 To whom thus *Michael*. Those whom last thou sawst
 In Triumph and luxurious wealth, are they
 First seen in acts of prowess eminent
 And great exploits, but of true virtue void; 790
 Who having spilt much blood, and done much waste
 Subduing Nations, and achiev'd thereby
 Fame in the World, high titles, and rich prey,
 Shall change their course to pleasure, ease, and sloth,
 Surfeit, and lust, till wantonness and pride 795
 Raise out of friendship hostile deeds in Peace.
 The conquer'd also, and enslav'd by War
 Shall with their freedom lost all virtue lose
 And fear of God, from whom their piety feign'd
 In sharp contest of Battel found no aid 800
 Against invaders; therefore cool'd in zeal
 Thenceforth shall practise how to live secure,
 Worldly or dissolute, on what their Lords
 Shall leave them to enjoy; for th' Earth shall bear
 More than enough, that temperance may be try'd:
 So all shall turn degenerate, all deprav'd, 806

352 PARADISE LOST. Book XI.

Justice and Temperance, Truth and Faith forgot;
 One Man except, the only Son of light
 In a dark Age, against example good,
 Against allurements, custom, and a World 810
 Offended; fearless of reproach and scorn,
 Or violence, he of their wicked ways
 Shall them admonish, and before them set
 The paths of righteousness, how much more safe,
 And full of peace, denouncing wrath to come 815
 On their impenitence; and shall return
 Of them derided, but of God observ'd.
 The one just Man alive; by his command
 Shall build a wondrous Ark, as thou beheldst,
 To save himself and household from amidst 820
 A World devote to universal rack.
 No sooner he with them of Man and Beast
 Select for life shall in the Ark be lodg'd,
 And shelter'd round, but all the Cataracts
 Of Heav'n set open on the Earth shall pour. 825
 Rain day and night, all fountains of the Deep
 Broke up, shall heave the Ocean to usurp
 Beyond all bounds, till inundation rise
 Above the highest Hills: then shall this Mount
 Of Paradise by might of Waves be mov'd 830
 Out of his place, push'd by the horned flood,
 With all his verdure spoil'd, and Trees adrift
 Down the great River to the op'ning Gulf,
 And there take root an Island salt and bare, 835
 The haunt of Scales and Orcs, and Sea-mews clang.

Teach thee that God attributes to place
 No sanctity, if none be thither brought
 Men who there frequent, or therein dwell.
 And now what further shall ensue, behold.
 He look'd, and saw the Ark hull on the flood, 343
 Which now abated, for the Clonds were fled,
 Driv'n by a keen North-wind, that blowing dry
 Wrinkl'd the face of Deluge, as decay'd;
 And the clear Sun on his wide watry Glass
 Gaz'd hot, and of the fresh Wave largely drew, 345
 As after thirst, which made their flowing shrink
 From standing lake to tripping ebb, that stole
 With soft foot towards the deep, who now had stopt
 His Sluces, as the Heav'n his windows shut.
 The Ark no more now flotes, but seems on ground
 Fast on the top of some high mountain fixt.
 And now the tops of Hills as Rocks appear;
 With clamour thence the rapid Currents drive
 Towards the retreating Sea their furious tyde.
 Forthwith from out the Ark a Raven flies, 355
 And after him the surer messenger,
 A Dove sent forth once and again to spy
 Green Tree or ground whereon his foot may light;
 The second time returning, in his Bill
 An Olive leaf he brings, pacific sign: 360
 Anon dry ground appears, and from his Ark
 The ancient Sire descends with all his Train;
 Then with uplifted hands, and eyes devout
 Grateful to Heav'n, over his head beholds

A dewy Cloud, and in the Cloud a Bow 26
 Conspicuous with three list'd colours gay,
 Betok'ning peace from God, and Cov'nant new,
 Whereat the heart of *Adam* erst so sad
 Greatly rejoyc'd, and thus his joy broke forth.

O thou who future things canst represent 27
 As present, Heav'nly instructor, I revive
 At this last sight, assur'd that Man shall live
 With all the Creatures, and their seed preserve.
 Far less I now lament for one whole World
 Of wicked Sons destroy'd, than I rejoyce 28
 For one Man found so perfect and so just,
 That God vouchsafes to raise another World
 From him, and all his anger to forget.
 But say, what mean those colour'd streaks in Heav'n,
 Distended as the Brow of God appeas'd, 29
 Or serve they as a flowry verge to bind
 The fluid skirts of that same watry Cloud,
 Lest it again dissolve and show'r the Earth?

To whom th' Archangel. Dextrously thou aim'st;
 So willingly doth God remit his ire, 30
 Though late repenting him of Man deprav'd,
 Griev'd at his heart, when looking down he saw
 The whole Earth fill'd with violence, and all flesh
 Corrupting each their way; yet those remov'd.
 Such grace shall one just Man find in his sight, 31
 That he relents, nor to blot out mankind,
 And makes a Covenant never to destroy
 The Earth again by flood, nor let the Sea

surpass his bounds, nor Rain to drown the World
With Man therein or Beast; but when he brings
Over the Earth a Cloud, will therein set
His triple-colour'd Bow, whereon to look
And call to mind his Cov'nant: Day and Night,
And rime and Harvest, Heat and hoary Frost
Shall hold their course, till fire purge all things new,
Both Heav'n and Earth, wherein the just shall dwell.

The End of the Eleventh Book.

Paradise Lost.

BOOK XII.

The ARGUMENT.

The Angel Michael continues from the Flood to relate what shall succeed, in the mention of Abraham, comes by degrees to explain, who that Seed of the Woman shall be, which was promised Adam and Eve in the Fall; his Incarnation, Death, Resurrection, and Ascension; the state of the Church till his second Coming. Adam greatly satisfied and recomforted by these Relations and Promises descends the Hill with Michael; wakens Eve, who all this while had slept, but with gentle dreams compos'd to quietness of mind and submission. Michael in either hand leads them out of Paradise, the fiery Sword waving behind them, and the Cherubim taking their Station to guard the Place.



Lib. XII.



S one who in his journey bates at Noon,
 Tho' bent on speed, so here the Arch-angel
 Twixt the world destroy'd and world restor'd, [paus'd
Adam aught perhaps might interpose;
 Then with transition sweet new Speech resumes. 5
 Thus thou hast seen one World begin and end;
 And Man as from a second stock proceed.
 Such thou hast yet to see, but I perceive
 By mortal sight to fail; objects divine
 Lust needs impair and weary human sense: 10
 Henceforth what is to come I will relate,
 Thou therefore give due audience, and attend.
 This second course of Men, while yet but few,
 And while the dread of judgement past remains
 Fresh in their minds, fearing the Deity, 15
 With some regard to what is just and right
 Shall lead their lives, and multiply apace,
 Labouring the soil, and reaping plenteous crop,
 Corn, wine and oyl; and from the herd or flock,
 Oft sacrificing Bullock, Lamb, or Kid, 20
 With large Wine-offerings pour'd, and sacred Feast,
 Shall spend their days in joy unblam'd, and dwell
 Long time in peace by Families and Tribes
 Under paternal rule; till one shall rise
 Of proud ambitious heart, who not content 25
 With fair equality, fraternal state,
 Will arrogate Dominion undeserv'd
 Over his brethren, and quite dispossess
 Concord and law of Nature from the Earth,

Nimrod

Hunting (and Men not Beasts shall be his game) 30
 With War and hostile snare such as refuse
 Subjection to his Empire tyrannous:

A mighty Hunter thence he shall be sty'd
 Before the Lord, as in despite of Heav'n,
 Or from Heav'n claiming second Sov'reignty;
 And from Rebellion shall derive his name,
 Though of Rebelli n others he accuse.

He with a crew, whom like Ambition joyns
 With him or under him to tyrannize,
 Marching from *Eden* towards the West, shall find
 The Plain, wherein a black bituminous gurge
 Boiles out from under ground, the mouth of Hell
 Of Brick; and of that stuff they cast to build

Babel A City and Tow'r, whose top may reach to Heav'n;
 And get themselves a name, lest far dispers'd
 In foreign Lands their memory be lost,
 Regardless whether good or evil fame.

But God who oft descends to visit men
 Unseen, and through their habitations walks
 To mark their doings, them beholding soon, 35
 Comes down to see their City, e'er the Tow'r
 Obstruct Heav'n Tow'rs, and in derision sets
 Upon their Tongues a various Spirit to raise
 Quite out their Native Language, and instead
 To sow a jangling noise of words unknown: 38
 Forthwith a hideous gabble rises loud

Among the Builders; each to other calls
 Not understood, till hoarse, and all in rage,
 As mockt they storm; great laughter was in Heav'n

And looking down, to see the hubbub strange 60
 And hear the din; thus was the building left
 Niculous, and the work Confusion nam'd.
 Whereto thus *Adam* fatherly displeas'd.
 execrable Son so to aspire
 Above his Brethren, to himself assuming 65
 Authority usurpt, from God not giv'n:
 He gave us only over Beast, Fish, Fowl
 Dominion absolute; that right we hold
 By his donation; but Man over men
 He made not Lord; such title to himself 70
 Reserving, human left from human free.
 Yet this Usurper his encroachment proud
 Stays not on Man; to God his Tow'r intends
 Rege and defiance: Wretched man! what food
 Will he convey up thither to sustain 75
 Himself and his rash Army, where thin Aire
 Above the Clouds will pine his entrails gross,
 And furnish him of Breath, if not of Bread?

To whom thus *Michael*. Justly thou abhor'st
 That Son, who on the quiet state of men 80
 Such trouble brought, affecting to subdue
 Rational Liberty; yet know withal,
 Since by original lapse, true Liberty
 Is lost, which always with right Reason dwells
 Twin'd, and from her hath no dividual being: 85
 Reason in man obscur'd, or not obey'd,
 Immediately inordinate desires
 And upstart Passions catch the Government
 From Reason, and to servitude reduce

Man till them free. Therefore since he permits
 Within himself unworthy Powers to reign
 Over free Reason, God in Judgement just
 Subjects him from without to violent Lords;
 Who oft as undeservedly enthrall
 His outward freedom: Tyranny must be,
 Though to the Tyrant thereby no excuse.
 Yet sometimes Nations will decline so low
 From virtue, which is reason, that no wrong,
 But Justice, and some fatal curse annex
 Deprives them of their outward liberty,
 Their inward lost: Witness th' irreverent Son
 Of him who built the Ark, who for the same
 Done to his Father, heard his heavy curse,
Servant of Servants, on his vitious Race.
 Thus will this latter, as the former World,
 Still tend from bad to worse, till God at last
 Wearied with their iniquities, withdraw
 His presence from among them, and avert
 His holy Eyes; resolving from thenceforth
 To leave them to their own polluted ways;
 And one peculiar Nation to select
 From all the rest, of whom to be invoc'd,
 A Nation from one faithful man to spring:
 Him on this side *Euphrates* yet residing,
 Bred up in Idol-worship. O that men
 (Canst thou believe?) should be so stupid grown,
 While yet the Patriarch liv'd, who escap'd the Flood,
 As to forsake the living God, and fall
 To worship their own work in Wood and Stone

Book XII. PARADISE LOST. 361

For Gods! yet him God the most High vouchsafes
 To call by Vision from his Father's house, 121
 His kindred and false Gods, into a Land
 Which he will shew him, and from him will raise
 A mighty Nation, and upon him shower
 His benediction so, that in his Seed 125
 All Nations shall be blest; he straight obeys,
 Not knowing to what Land, yet firm believes:
 I see him, but thou canst not, with what Faith
 He leaves his Gods, his Friends, and native Soil
 Of *Chaldea*, passing now the Ford 130
 To *Haran*, after him a cumbrous Train
 Of Herds and Flocks, and numerous servitude;
 Not wandering poor, but trusting all his wealth
 With God, who call'd him; in a land unknown.
Canaan he now attains, I see his Tents 135
 Picht about *Sechem*, and the neighbouring Plain
 Of *Morah*; there by promise he receives
 Gift to his Progeny of all that Land;
 From *Hamath* Northward to the Desert South
 (Things by their names I call, tho' yet unnam'd) 140
 From *Hermon* East to the great Western Sea,
 Mount *Hermon*, yonder Sea, each place behold
 In prospect, as I point them; on the shore
 Mount *Carmel*; here the double-founted stream
Jordan, true limit Eastward; but his Sons 145
 Shall dwell to *Senir*, that long ridge of Hills.
 This ponder, that all Nations of the Earth
 Shall in his Seed be blest; by that Seed
 Is meant thy great deliverer, who shall bruise

The Serpent's head; whereof to thee anon 150
 Plainlier shall be reveal'd. This Patriarch blest,
 Whom *faithful Abraham* due time shall call,
 A Son, and of his Son a Grand-child leaves,
 Like him in faith, in wisdom, and renown;
 The Grand-child with twelve Sons increast, departs
 From *Canaan*, to a Land hereafter call'd 155
Egypt, divided by the River *Nile*;
 See where it flows, disgorging at seven mouths
 Into a Sea: to sojourn in that Land
 He comes invited by a younger Son 160
 In time of dearth, a Son whose worthy deeds
 Raise him to be the second in that Realm
 Of *Pharao*: there he dies, and leaves his Race
 Growing into a Nation, and now grown
 Suspected to a sequest King, who seeks 165
 To stop their overgrowth, as inmate guests
 Too numerous; whence of guests he makes them slaves
 Inhospitably, and kills their infant Males:
 Till by two brethren, (those two brethren call
Moses and *Aaron*) sent from God to chains 170
 His people from Enthralment, they return
 With glory and spoil back to their promis'd Land.
 But first the lawless Tyrant, who denies
 To know their God, or message to regard,
 Must be compell'd by Signs and Judgments dire:
 To blood unshed the Rivers must be turn'd, 175
 Frogs, Lice and Flies must all his Palace fill
 With loath'd intrusion, and fill all the Land;
 His Cattle must of Rot and Murren die,

Torches and blains must all his flesh imbosa, 180
 And all his people; Thunder mixt with Hail,
 Hail mixt with fire must rend th' Egyptian Sky
 And wheel on th' Earth, devouring where it rolls;
 What it devours not; Herb, or Fruit, or Grain,
 A darksom Cloud of Locusts swarming down 185
 Must eat, and on the ground leave nothing green:
 Darknes must overshadow all his bounds,
 Palpable darknes, and blot our three days;
 Last with one midnight stroke all the first-born
 Of Egypt must lye dead. Thus with ten wounds
 The River-dragon tarr'd at length submits 190
 To let his sojourners depart, and oft
 Humbles his stubborn heart, but still as Ice
 More harden'd after thaw, till in his rage
 Pursuing whom he late dismiss'd, the Sea 195
 Swallows him with his Host, but them lets pass
 As on dry land between two cristal walls,
 Aw'd by the rod of Moses so to stand
 Divided, till his resor'd gain their shoar:
 Such wondrous pow'r God to his Saint will lend, 200
 Though present in his Angel, who shall go
 Before him in a Cloud, and Pillar of Fire,
 By day a Cloud, by night a Pillar of Fire,
 To guide them in their journey, and remove
 Behind them, while th'obdurate King pursues: 205
 All night he will pursue, but his approach
 Darknes defends between till morning Watch;
 Then through the Fiery Pillar and the Cloud
 God looking forth will trouble all his Host

And craze their Chariot wheels : when by command
Moses once more his potent Rod extends 211
 Over the Sea ; the Sea his Rod obeys ;
 On their embattl'd ranks the Waves return,
 And overwhelm their War : the Race elect,
 Safe towards *Canaan* from the shore advance 215
 Through the wild Desert, not the readiest way,
 Left entering on the *Canaanite* alarm'd
 War terrifie them inexpert, and fear
 Return them back to *Egypt*, chusing rather
 Inglorious life with servitude ; for life 220
 To noble and ignoble is more sweet
 Untrain'd in Arms, where rashness leads not on.
 This also shall they gain by their delay
 In the wide Wilderness, there they shall found
 Their government, and their great Senate chuse 225
 Thro' the twelve Tribes, to rule by Laws ordain'd :
 God from the Mount of *Sinai*, whose gray top
 Shall tremble, he descending, will himself
 In Thunder, Lightning and loud Trumpets sound
 Ordain them Laws ; part such as appertain 230
 To civil Justice, part religious Rites
 Of sacrifice, informing them, by types
 And shadows, of that destin'd Seed to bruise
 The Serpent, by what means he shall achieve
 Mankind's deliverance. But the voice of God 235
 To mortal ear is dreadful ; they beseech
 That *Moses* might report to them his will,
 And terror cease ; he grants what they besought
 Instructed that to God is no access

Without Mediator, whose high Office now. 240
Moses in figure bears, to introduce
 One greater, of whose day he shall foretel,
 And all the Prophets in their Age the times
 Of great *Messiah* shall sing. Thus Laws and Rites
 Establish'd, such delight hath God in Men 245
 Obedient to his will, that he vouchsafes
 Among them to set up his Tabernacle,
 The holy One with mortal Men to dwell:
 By his prescript a Sanctuary is fram'd
 Of Cedar, overlaid with Gold, therein 250
 An Ark, and in the Ark his Testimony,
 The Records of his Cov'nant, over those
 A Mercy-seat of Gold between the wings
 Of two bright Cherubim, before him burn
 Seven-Lamps as in a Zodiac representing 255
 The Heav'nly fires, over the Tent a Cloud
 Shall rest by Day, a fiery gleam by Night,
 Save when they journey, and at length they come,
 Conducted by his Angel to the Land
 Promis'd to *Abraham* and his Seed: the rest 260
 Were long to tell, how many Battels fought,
 How many Kings destroy'd, and Kingdoms won,
 Or how the Sun shall in mid-Heav'n stand still
 A Day entire, and Night's due course adjourn,
 Man's voice commanding, Sun in *Gibeon* stand, 265
 And thou Moon in the vale of *Aialon*,
 Till *Israel* overcome; so call the third
 From *Abraham*, Son of *Isaac*, and from him
 His whole descent, who thus shall *Canaan* win.

Here *Adam* interpos'd, O feat from *Heav'n*, 270
 Enlightner of my darkness, gracious things
 Thou hast reveal'd, those chiefly which concern
 Just *Abraham* and his Seed: now first I find
 Mine eyes true op'ning, and my heart much eas'd,
 E'er while perplext with thoughts what would become
 Of me and all Mankind; but now I see 275
 His day, in whom all Nations will be blest,
 Favour unmerited by me, who sought
 Forbidd'n knowledge by forbidd'n means.
 This yet I apprehend not, why to those 280
 Among whom God will deign to dwell on Earth
 So many and so various Laws are giv'n:
 So many Laws argue so many sins
 Among them; how can God with such reside!
 To whom thus *Michael*. Doubt not but that sin
 Will reign among them, as of thee begot; 285
 And therefore was Law given to evince
 Their natural pravity, by stirring up
 Sin against Law to fight: that when they see
 Law can discover sin, but not remove, 290
 Save by those shadowy expiations weak,
 The blood of Bulls and Goats, they may conclude
 Some blood more precious must be paid for Man,
 Just for unjust, that in such righteousness
 To them by Faith imputed, they may find 295
 Justification towards God, and peace
 Of Conscience, which the Law by Ceremonies
 Cannot appease, nor Man the mortal part
 Perform, and not performing cannot live,

In Law appears imperfect, and but giv'n 300
 With purpose to resign them in full time
 Up to a better Cov'nant, disciplin'd
 From shadowy Types to Truth, from Flesh to Spirit,
 From imposition of strict Laws, to free
 Acceptance of large Grace, from servil fear 305
 To filial, works of Law to works of Faith.
 And therefore shall not *Moses*, though of God
 Highly belov'd, being but the Minister
 Of Law, his people into *Canaan* lead;
 But *Josua*, whom the Gentiles *Jasus* call, 310
 His Name and Office bearing, who shall quell
 The Adversary Serpent, and bring back
 Through the World's wilderness a long wander'd Man
 Safe to eternal Paradise of rest, 315
 Mean while they in their earthly *Canaan* plac'd
 Long time shall dwell and prosper, but when sins
 National interrupt their publick Peace,
 Provoking God to raise them Enemies;
 From whom as oft he saves them penitent
 By Judges first, then under Kings; of whom 320
 The second, both for piety renown'd
 And puissant deeds, a Promise shall receive
 Irrevocable, that his Regal Throne
 For ever shall endure; the like shall sing
 All prophecy, That of the Royal Stock 325
 Of *David* (so I name this King) shall rise
 A Son, the Woman's Seed to thee foretold,
 Foretold to *Abraham*, as in whom shall trust
 All Nations, and to Kings foretold, of Kings

368 PARADISE LOST. Book XII.

The last, for of his Reign shall be no end. 330
 But first a long succession must ensue,
 And his next Son for Wealth and Wisdom fam'd,
 The clouded Ark of God till then in Tents
 Wandring, shall in a glorious Temple enshrine.
 Such follow him, as shall be register'd 335
 Part good, part bad, of bad the longer scrowle,
 Whose foul Idolatries, and other faults
 Heap'd to the popular sum, will so incense
 God, as to leave them, and expose their Land,
 Their City, his Temple, and his holy Ark 340
 With all his sacred things, a scorn and prey
 To that proud City, whose high Walls thou saw'st
 Left in confusion, *Babylon* thence call'd.
 There in Captivity he lets them dwell
 The space of seventy years, then brings them back,
 Remembering mercy, and his Cov'nant sworn 345
 To *David*, stablish'd as the days of Heav'n.
 Return'd from *Babylon* by leave of Kings
 Their Lords, whom God dispos'd, the house of God
 They first re-edifie, and for a while 350
 In mean estate live moderate, till grown
 In wealth and multitude, factious they grow;
 But first among the Priests dissention springs,
 Men who attend the Altar, and should most
 Endeavour Peace: their strife pollution brings 355
 Upon the Temple it self: at last they seize
 The Scepter, and regard not *David's* Sons.
 Then lose it to a Stranger, that the true
 Anointed King *Messiah* might be born

pr'd of his right; yet at his Birth a Star 366
 unseen before in Heav'n proclaims him come,
 and guides the Eastern Sages, who enquire
 his place, to offer Incense, Myrrh and Gold;
 his place of Birth a solemn Angel tells
 the simple Shepherds, keeping watch by night; 365
 they gladly thither haste, and by a Quire
 of Squadron'd Angels hear his Carol sung.
 A Virgin is his Mother, but his Sire
 The Power of the most High; he shall ascend
 The Throne hereditary, and bound his Reign 370
 With Earth's wide bounds, his Glory with the Heav'ns.

He ceas'd, discerning *Adam* with such joy
 Surcharg'd, as had like grief been dew'd in tears
 Without the vent of Words, which these he breath'd.

O Prophet of glad tidings, finisher 375
 Of utmost hope! now clear I understand
 What oft my stedfast thoughts have search'd in vain;
 Why our great expectation should be call'd
 The Seed of Woman: Virgin Mother, hail,
 High in the love of Heav'n, yet from my Loins 380
 Thou shalt proceed, and from thy Womb the Son
 Of God most High; so God with Man unites.
 Needs must the Serpent now his capital bruise
 Expect with mortal pain: say where and when 384
 Their fight, what stroke shall bruise the Victor's heel.

To whom thus *Michael*. Dream not of their fight,
 As of a Duel, or the local wounds
 Of head or heel: not therefore joins the Son
 Manhood to God-head, with more strength to foil

Thy Enemy, nor so is overcome 390

Satan, whose fall from Heav'n, a deadlier bruise,

Disabl'd not to give thee thy deaths wound:

Which he, who comes thy Saviour, shall recure,

Not by destroying *Satan*, but his works

In thee and in thy Steed: nor can this be, 395

But by fulfilling that which thou didst want,

Obedience to the Law of God, impos'd

On penalty of death, and suffering death,

The pensky to thy transgression due,

And due to theirs which out of thine will grow: 400

So only can high Justice rest appaid.

The Law of God exact he shall fulfil

Both by obedience and by love, though love

Alone fulfil the Law; thy punishment

He shall endure by coming in the Flesh 405

To a reproachful Life and curst Death,

Proclaiming Life to all who shall believe

In his Redemption, and that his Obedience

Imputed, becomes theirs by Faith, his Merits

To save them, not their own, tho' legal Works. 410

For this he shall live hated, be blasphem'd,

Seis'd on by force, judg'd, and to death condemn'd

A shameful and accurst, nail'd to the Cross

By his own Nation, slain for bringing Life;

But to the Cross he nails thy Enemies, 415

The Law that is against thee, and the sins

Of all Mankind, with him there crucify'd,

Never to hurt them more, who rightly trust

In this his Satisfaction; so he dies,

But soon revives, Death over him no power 420
 Shall long usurp; e'er the third dawning light
 Return, the Stars of Morn shall see him rise
 Out of his Grave, fresh as the dawning light,
 The Ransom paid, which Man from death redeems,
 His death for Man, as many as offer'd Life 425
 Neglect not, and the benefit embrace

By Faith not void of Works: this God-like act
 Annuls thy doom, the death thou shouldst have dy'd,
 In sin for ever lost from Life; this act
 Shall bruise the head of *Satan*, crush his strength 430
 Defeating Sin and Death, his two main arms,
 And fix far deeper in his head their stings
 Than temporal death shall bruise the Victor's heel,
 Or theirs whom he redeems, a death like sleep,
 A gentle wafting to immortal Life. 435

Nor after Resurrection shall he stay
 Longer on Earth than certain times to appear
 To his Disciples, Men who in his Life
 Still follow'd him; to them shall leave in charge
 To teach all Nations what of him they learn'd 440
 And his Salvation, them who shall believe
 Baptizing in the profluent stream, the sign
 Of washing them from guilt of sin to Life
 Pure, and in mind prepar'd, if so befall,
 For death, like that which the Redeemer dy'd. 445
 All Nations they shall teach; for from that day
 Not only to the Sons of *Abraham's* Loins
 Salvation shall be preach'd, but to the Sons
 Of *Abraham's* Faith, where-ever thro' the World;

So in his Seed all Nations shall be blest. 450

Then to the Heav'n of Heav'ns shall he ascend
With victory, triumphing through the Aire
Over his Foes and thine; there shall surprise
The Serpent, Prince of Aire, and drag in Chains
Thro' all his Realm, and there confounded leave;
Then enter into Glory, and resume 456

His Seat at God's right hand, exalted high
Above all Names in Heav'n; and thence shall come,
When the World's Dissolution shall be ripe,
With Glory and Pow'r to judge both quick and dead,
To judge th' unfaithful dead, but to reward 461
His faithful, and receive them into Bliss,

Whether in Heav'n or Earth, for then the Earth
Shall all be Paradise, far happier place
Than this of *Eden*, and far happier days. 465

So spake th' Arch-angel *Michael*, then paus'd,
As at the World's great Period; and our Sire
Repleat with joy and wonder thus reply'd.

O Goodness infinite, Goodness immense!
That all this good of evil shall produce, 470

And evil turn to good; more wonderful
Than that which by creation first brought forth
Light out of darkness! full of doubt I stand,
Whether I should repent me now of sin

By me done and occasion'd, or rejoyce 475
Much more, that much more good thereof shall spring.

To God more glory, more good will to Men
From God, and over wrath grace shall abound.
But say, if our deliverer up to Heav'n

Must reascend, what will beside the few 480
 His faithful, left among th' unfaithful herd,
 The enemies of truth; who then shall guide
 His people, who defend? will they not deal
 Worse with his followers than with him they dealt?

Be sure they will, said th' Angel; but from Heav'n
 He to his own a Comforter will send, 486

The promise of the Father, who shall dwell
 His Spirit within them, and the Law of Faith
 Working thro' love, upon their hearts shall write,
 To guide them in all truth, and also arm 490
 With spiritual Armour, able to resist

Satan's assaults, and quench his fiery darts,
 What men can do against them, not afraid,
 Though to the death, against such cruelties
 With inward consolations recompenc'd, 495

And oft supported so as shall amaze
 Their proudest persecuters: for the Spirit
 Pour'd first on his Apostles, whom he sends
 To evangelize the Nations, then on all
 Baptiz'd, shall them with wondrous Gifts endue 500
 To speak all Tongues, and do all Miracles,
 As did their Lord before them. Thus they win

Great numbers of each Nation to receive
 With joy the tidings brought from Heav'n: at length
 Their Ministry perform'd, and race well run, 505
 Their doctrine and their story written left,
 They die; but in their room, as they forewarn,
 Wolves shall succeed for teachers, grievous Wolves,
 Who all the sacred mysteries of Heav'n

To their own vile advantages shall turn 510
 Of lucre and ambition, and the truth
 With superstitions and traditions taint,
 Left only in those written Records pure,
 Though not but by the Spirit understood.
 Then shall they seek to avail themselves of names,
 Places and titles, and with these to join 516
 Secular power, though feigning still to act
 By spiritual, to themselves appropriating
 The Spirit of God, promis'd alike and giv'n
 To all Believers; and from that pretence, 520
 Spiritual Laws by carnal power shall force
 On every conscience; Laws which none shall find
 Left them inroll'd, or what the Spirit within
 Shall on the heart engrave. What will they then
 But force the Spirit of Grace it self, and bind 525
 His consort Liberty; what, but unbuild
 His living Temples, built by Faith to stand,
 Their own Faith not anothers; for on Earth
 Who against Faith and Conscience can be heard
 Infallible? yet many will presume: 530
 Whence heavy persecution shall arise
 On all who in the worship persevere
 Of Spirit and Truth; the rest, far greater part,
 Well deem in outward Rites and specious forms
 Religion satisfy'd; Truth shall retire 535
 Bestuck with slanderous darts, and works of Faith
 Rarely be found: so shall the World go on,
 To good malignant, to bad men benign,
 Under her own weight groaning till the day

Appear of respiration to the just, 540
 And vengeance to the wicked, at return
 Of him so lately promis'd to thy aid
 The Woman's seed, obscurely then foretold,
 Now amplier known thy Saviour and thy Lord,
 Asst in the Clouds from Heav'n to be reveal'd 545
 In glory of the Father, to dissolve
 Satan with his perverted World, then raise
 From the conflagrant mass, purg'd and refin'd,
 New Heav'ns, new Earth, Ages of endless date
 Founded in righteousness and peace and love 550
 To bring forth fruits, Joy and eternal Bliss.

He ended; and thus Adam last reply'd.
 How soon hath thy prediction, Seer blest,
 Measur'd this transient World, the Race of time;
 Till time stand fixt: beyond is all Abyss, 555
 Eternity, whose end no eye can reach.
 Greatly instructed I shall hence depart,
 Greatly in peace of thoughts, and have my fill
 Of knowledge, what this Vessel can contain;
 Beyond which was my folly to aspire. 560
 Henceforth I learn, that to obey is best,
 And love with fear the only God, to walk
 As in his presence, ever to observe
 His providence, and on him sole depend.
 Merciful over all his works, with good 565
 Still overcoming evil, and by small
 Accomplishing great things, by things deem'd weak.
 Subverting worldly strong, and worldly wise
 By simply meek; that suffering for Truths sake

Is fortitude to highest victory, 370
 And to the faithful Death the Gate of Life;
 Taught this by his example whom I now
 Acknowledge my Redeemer ever blest.

To whom thus also th' Angel last reply'd:
 This having learnt, thou hast attain'd the sum 375
 Of wisdom; hope no higher, though all the Stars
 Thou knewst by name, and all th' ethereal Powers,
 All secrets of the deep, all Natures works,
 Or works of God in Heav'n, Aire, Earth, or Sea,
 And all the riches of this World enjoy'dst, 380
 And all the rule, one Empire; only add
 Deeds to thy knowledge answerable, add Faith;
 Add Virtue, Patience, Temperance, add Love,
 By name to come call'd Charity, the soul
 Of all the rest: then wilt thou not be loath. 385
 To leave this Paradise, but shalt possess
 A paradise within thee, happier far.
 Let us descend now therefore from this top
 Of speculation; for the hour precise
 Exacts our parting hence; and see the Guards, 390
 By me encamp't on yonder Hill, expect
 Their motion, at whose Front a flaming Sword,
 In signal of remove, waves fiercely round;
 We may no longer stay: go, waken Eve;
 Her also I with gentle Dreams have calm'd 395
 Portending good, and all her spirits compos'd
 To meek submission: thou at season fit
 Let her with thee partake what thou hast heard,
 Chiefly what may concern her Faith to know,

The great deliverance by her Seed to come 600
 or by the Woman's Seed) on all Mankind.
 That ye may live, which will be many days,
 Though in one Faith unanimous though sad,
 In this cause for evils past, yet much more cheer'd
 In meditation on the happy end. 605

He ended, and they both descend the Hill;
 Descended, *Adam* to the Bowre where *Eve*
 Lay sleeping ran before, but found her wak't;
 And thus with words not sad she him receiv'd.
 Whence thou return'st, and whither went'st, I know;
 For God is also in sleep, and Dreams advise, 610
 Which he hath sent propitious, some great good
 Resolving, since with sorrow and heart's distress
 Wearied I fell asleep; but now lead on;
 In me is no delay; with thee to go, 615
 Or to stay here; without thee here to stay,
 Or to go hence unwillingly; thou to me
 Art all things under Heav'n, all places thou,
 Who for my woful crime art banish'd hence.
 This further consolation yet secure 620
 I carry hence; though all by me is lost,
 Such favour I unworthy am vouchsaf't,
 By me the Promis'd Seed shall all restore.

So spake our Mother *Eve*, and *Adam* heard
 Well pleas'd, but answer'd not; for now too nigh 625
 Th' Archangel stood, and from the other Hill
 To their fixt Station, all in bright array
 The Cherubim descended; on the ground
 Gliding metéoreous, as Ev'ning Mist

Ris'n from a River o'er the marsh glides, 630
 And gathers ground fast at the Labourers heed
 Homeward returning. High in front advanc'd
 The brandish'd Sword of God before them blaz'd.
 Fierce as a Comet; which with torrid heat,
 And vapours as the *Libyan* Air adust, 635
 Began to parch that temperate Clime; when
 In either hand the hast'ning Angel caught
 Our lingring Parents, and to th' Eastern Gate
 Led them direct, and down the Cliff as fast
 To the subjected Plain; then disappear'd. 640
 They looking back, all th' Eastern side beheld
 Of Paradise, so late their happy seat,
 Wav'd over by that flaming Brand, the Gate
 With dreadful Faces throng'd and fiery Arms: 645
 Some natural tears they drop'd, but wip'd them soon;
 The World was all before them, where to chuse
 Their place of rest, and Providence their guide:
 They hand in hand with wandring steps and slow,
 Through *Eden* took their solitary way.

The E N D.

INDEX.

A

	Page	Line
A <i>Aron and Moses, their Mis-</i>	p. 362.	l. 170
<i>sion to Egypt</i>		
<i>Abdiel (a Seraph) opposes</i>	p. 159.	l. 803.
<i>Satan promoting i. e.</i>		
<i>Angels Revolt, &c.</i>		
<i>Reply to his Answer</i>	p. 162.	l. 377
<i>His Fidelity, &c. Celebrated</i>	---	l. 396
<i>Retreat from Satan's Party</i>	p. 166.	l. 1
<i>Soliloquy on View of him at their</i>	p. 169.	l. 114.
<i>Head</i>		
<i>Speech to him thereon</i>	p. 170.	l. 130
<i>Reply to his Answer</i>	p. 171.	l. 171
<i>Encounters him in the Battel</i>	p. 172.	l. 189
<i>Vanquishes Ariel, Arioc and Ra-</i>	p. 178.	l. 369.
<i>miel, (fallen Angels)</i>		
<i>Abel and Cain, their Story related</i>	p. 339.	l. 429
<i>Abraham's and the Patriarchs</i>	p. 360.	l. 113
<i>All Nations his Sons by Faith</i>	p. 371.	l. 446
<i>Acheron, a River of Hell</i>	p. 51.	l. 570
<i>Adam and Eve described Generally</i>	p. 106.	l. 288
<i>Particularly</i>	---	l. 295
	p. 107.	l. 312
	p. 118.	l. 492
<i>Their State of Innocence</i>	p. 121.	l. 738
	p. 140.	l. 211
	p. 143.	l. 303
	p. 238.	l. 510
	<i>Vide Innocence.</i>	
<i>Night Oraison</i>	p. 124.	l. 720

INDEX.

<i>Morning Oraison</i>	P. 138. L. 159
<i>Preparations to Entertain the Angel</i>	P. 143. L. 313
<i>Raphael</i>	P. 146. L. 398
<i>The Table and Entertainment de-</i> <i>scrib'd</i>	P. 120. L. 708
<i>Their Nuptial Bed</i>	P. 238. L. 510
<i>Nuptials Celebrated</i>	P. 257. L. 385
<i>Parting preceding the Temptation</i>	P. 278. L. 1009
<i>Behaviour after their Fall</i>	P. 280. L. 1051
<i>Find themselves Naked</i>	P. 281. L. 1099
<i>Make themselves Breaches of Fig</i> <i>Leaves</i>	P. 284. L. 1187
<i>Recriminate on, and Reproach each</i> <i>other</i>	P. 290. L. 97
<i>Hide themselves from God (the Son)</i>	L. 109
<i>Appearance before him</i>	P. 323. L. 1098
<i>Repentance</i>	P. 377. L. 625
<i>Expulsion from Paradise</i>	Vide Similies.
<i>Adam, his Discourse with Eve on the</i> <i>Prohibition of the Tree of Know-</i> <i>ledge</i>	P. 110. L. 411
<i>To her at Night</i>	P. 117. L. 510
<i>Answer to her Question about the</i> <i>Nightly Luminaries</i>	P. 118. L. 660
<i>Viewing her Sleeping</i>	P. 133. L. 8
<i>Answer to her relating her Dream,</i> <i>(the Subject of Satan's first illu-</i> <i>sive Temptation)</i>	P. 136. L. 24
<i>To her Weeping</i>	P. 137. L. 129
<i>Invites the Angel Raphael to his</i> <i>Bover, &c.</i>	P. 145. L. 361
<i>Discourse with him</i>	P. 148. L. 460
<i>Continued on various Subjects, to</i> <i>Vide Raphael</i>	P. 242. L. 651
<i>His Creation and Dominion, &c. o-</i> <i>ver the Creatures</i>	P. 251. L. 524
<i>Prohibited the Tree of Knowledge</i>	P. 216. L. 542
<i>Account of himself, and the Objects</i> <i>about him, &c. on his Creation</i>	P. 231. L. 332
	P. 229. L. 253

I N D E X.

His first View of the Divine Presence, Inflation in Paradise, &c.	p. 231. l. 311
Speech to God thereon, and on his Solitude there	p. 232. l. 357
Reply to God's Answer	p. 233. l. 379
Leap on the Formation of Eve describ'd	p. 236. l. 451
first View of her	p. 237. l. 481
Passion for her	p. 238. l. 521
Mediation to Raphael	p. 242. l. 644
Discourse with Eve preceding the Temptation (on Satan's Subtilty, and the means to resist it, &c.)	from p. 251. l. 205 to p. 257. l. 384
Care, and Fears for her in Absence	p. 272. l. 838
Meets her returning with the Forbidden Fruit.	p. 273. l. 847
Soliloquy lamenting her Transgression	p. 274. l. 896
Resolves to Die with her	p. 275. l. 907
Speech to her thereon	----- l. 921
Eats the Forbidden Fruit	p. 278. l. 996
Incites her to Carnal Fruition (the first Effect of it)	l. 1011 l. 1016
The Place, &c. described	p. 279. l. 1037
After Speech to her on their Fall and Nakedness	p. 280. l. 1067
Another, charging her as the Aggressor	p. 282. l. 1132
Reply to her Answer (recriminates her affected self-sufficiency, &c.)	p. 281. l. 1162
Answer to God (the Son) calling him to Judgment	p. 290. l. 1115
Reply to him (accuses Eve)	p. 291. l. 124
The Sentence pronounced on him	p. 293. l. 197
Soliloquy thereon	p. 311. l. 720
continued	p. 315. l. 854
Wishes for his Dissolution	p. 311. l. 746 p. 312. l. 771
Reflection on the Immortality of the Soul, &c.	p. 313. l. 782
Repulsory Speech to Eve attempting to Console him	p. 315. l. 866

INDEX.

<i>Relents towards her</i>	p. 318. l. 937
<i>Reply to her (accusing her self as the first in Transgression)</i>	} l. 947.
<i>Answer (to her Reply advising to die by their own Hands)</i>	} p. 320. l. 1000
<i>Resolves the contrary, Submission to God's Will and Repentance</i>	} p. 321. l. 1000
<i>Speech to Eve (on the Efficacy of Prayer, &c.)</i>	} p. 322. l. 1000
<i>Hails her the Mother of Mankind</i>	p. 330. l. 1158
<i>Speech to her on the Omens preceding their Expulsion from Paradise</i>	} p. 331. l. 1199
<i>On the view of Michael approaching</i>	p. 332. l. 1226
<i>Behaviour on receiving the Message</i>	p. 333. l. 1263
<i>Speech to Michael thereon</i>	p. 334. l. 1295
<i>Resignation</i>	p. 337. l. 1370
<i>Discourse with Michael, dis- covering to him in Vision what should happen in the World till the Flood</i>	} from p. 340. l. 1450 to p. 354. l. 1867
<i>Discourse with him, relating what should happen to the general Resurrection</i>	} from p. 357. l. 6 to p. 375. l. 551
<i>General Reply to him, Resolutions of future Obedience, Dependence on God's Providence; &c.</i>	} p. 375. l. 552
<i>Vide Eve. Vide Michael. Vide Raphael Vide Similies.</i>	
<i>Adonis (or Thammuz) a fall'n Angel</i>	p. 17. l. 446
<i>Adramalec and Almadai, fall'n An- gels, wounded, and put to flight</i>	} p. 178. l. 365
<i>At first Clouded on Adam's Fall</i>	p. 331. l. 1188
<i>Allusions,</i>	<i>Vide Similies.</i>
<i>Amarant, a Flower transplanted from Paradise to Heaven</i>	} p. 81. l. 352
<i>Ambition censured</i>	} p. 327. l. 77 p. 48. l. 482 p. 99. l. 86
<i>A Cause of Satan's Fall</i>	
<i>Angels (Celestial) obey God of Choice, not Necessity</i>	} p. 150. l. 535
<i>Imbattel'd against Satan, and the fall'n Angels</i>	} p. 166. l. 15

INDEX.

<i>Their Signal, and March</i>	p. 167. l. 58
<i>Signal to Engage, and Engagement</i>	p. 172. l. 202
<i>Prevail</i>	p. 178. l. 386
<i>Disposition to reingage</i>	p. 183. l. 524
<i>Retreat</i>	p. 185. l. 97
<i>Rally again, and renew the Fight</i>	p. 187. l. 634
	p. 204. l. 180
<i>Their Song on the Creation</i>	p. 206. l. 232
	p. 216. l. 557
	p. 218. l. 602
<i>On its Dissolution and Renovation</i>	p. 308. l. 641
	p. 122. l. 778
<i>Guardians of Paradise, their Parade,</i>	p. 123. l. 782
<i>Watches, &c.</i>	p. 125. l. 861
	p. 129. l. 977
	p. 142. l. 287
<i>Ascend to Heaven on Adam's Fall</i>	p. 287. l. 17
<i>Appointed to Expel Adam, &c. from</i>	p. 329. l. 127.
<i>Paradise</i>	
<i>Descent there</i>	p. 331. l. 208
<i>Post assigned</i>	l. 220
<i>March possessing it, and Expelling</i>	p. 377. l. 626
<i>him, &c.</i>	
<i>Wise God the Father</i>	}
<i>and Son.</i>	
<i>Guardians of Mankind</i>	<i>Vide Similico.</i>
<i>Angels fallen, their after State</i>	p. 250. l. 152
	p. 4. l. 50
	p. 13. l. 339
	p. 14. l. 331
<i>Numbers</i>	p. 157. l. 743
<i>Names</i>	p. 15. l. 374
<i>Various Pursuits, &c.</i>	p. 49. l. 528
<i>Loss supply'd by Man's Creation</i>	p. 92. l. 677
<i>Imbattel'd against the Angels Cælestial</i>	p. 168. l. 79
<i>Engagement</i>	p. 172. l. 202
<i>Defeat</i>	p. 178. l. 386
<i>Disposition to revenge</i>	p. 182. l. 507
<i>Their Artillery, ----- Cannon, &c.</i>	p. 185. l. 572
<i>Prevail</i>	p. 185. l. 597
<i>Entire Defeat, and Expulsion</i>	} from p. 193. l. 831
<i>from Heav'n</i>	
	to p. 195. l. 877

I N D E X.

<i>Transformed to Serpents</i>	p. 304. L. 519
<i>Further punish'd with an Illusion of the forbidden Fruit</i>	} p. 305. L. 547
<i>Both Annually continued</i>	p. 306. L. 575
	Vide Satan. Vide Similes.
<i>Apostles, their Mission, &c.</i>	p. 371. L. 439
<i>Gift of the Holy Ghost</i>	p. 373. L. 497
<i>Successors (Wolves, false Teachers, &c.) describ'd</i>	} L. 508
<i>Argument of the Poem</i>	{ p. 3. l. 1
	{ p. 245. l. 1
<i>Ariel, Arioc and Ramiel (fall'n An- gels) vanquisb'd</i>	} p. 178. l. 369
<i>Ark, its Building by Noah, describ'd</i>	p. 349. L. 718
	Vide Noah.
<i>Ark of the Covenant Described</i>	p. 365. l. 249
<i>Ashtaroth and Baalim (fall'n Angels)</i>	p. 17. L. 422
<i>Astoreth, or Astarte (a fall'n Angel)</i>	p. 17. L. 438
<i>Author's Hymn on Conjugal Love</i>	p. 122. L. 750
<i>To Light</i>	p. 70. l. 1
	{ p. 3. l. 6.
<i>Invocations</i>	{ p. 71. l. 61
	{ p. 198. l. 1
	{ p. 345. l. 20
<i>Reflection, in prospect of Adam's, &c.</i>	} p. 44. l. 380
<i>Fall</i>	
<i>On Satan's premeditated Attempt</i>	p. 97. l. 1.
<i>On Eve's parting with Adam preceding it</i>	p. 258. L. 404
<i>On their Nakedness after the Fall</i>	p. 282. l. 1114
<i>On his own Blindness, &c.</i>	p. 70. l. 22
<i>Azazel (a fall'n Angel) Satan's Stan- dard Bearer</i>	} p. 2c. l. 534

B.

<i>Baalim and Ashtaroth (fall'n Angels)</i>	p. 17. L. 422
<i>Babel, the City and Tower, built by Nim- rod, &c.</i>	} p. 358. l. 38
<i>The Confusion of Languages there de- scrib'd</i>	} l. 48
<i>Baptism, what the Sign of</i>	p. 371. l. 443
	Baptiz'd,

INDEX.

Baptiz'd, the Holy Ghost given primi- tively to all Jacob	} P. 373. l. 497
Basel, &c. between the Coelestial, and Fall'n Angels, (God the Son concluding it) describ'd	} from p. 172. l. 202 to p. 195. l. 877
Vide Angels Coelestial, and Fall'n.	
Beasts, part of the sixth Day's Creation, describ'd	} P. 213. l. 453
Belzebub, (a fall'n Angel)	P. 5. l. 79
Describ'd	P. 41. l. 299
His Answer to Satan's first Speech after their Fall	} P. 7. l. 128
To his Second	P. 12. l. 272
Speech in Council, call'd by Satan thereon	P. 42. l. 310
Promotes an Attempt on the World	P. 43. l. 345
Belial, (a fall'n Angel)	P. 15. l. 290
Describ'd	P. 35. l. 108
His Speech in Council	l. 119
To Satan on their Advantage gain'd in the reingagement with the Coe- lestial Angels	} P. 186. l. 620
Birds, part of the fifth Day's Crea- tion, Describ'd	} P. 211. l. 417
Blasts, an Effect of Adam's Fall	P. 310. l. 692
Bridge from Hell Gates to the World over Chaos, the work, &c. describ'd	} P. 296. l. 293
C	
Cain and Abel, their Story related	P. 339. l. 429
Cham's Story	P. 360. l. 807
Chance, the common Notion of it, exploded	P. 62. l. 909
Chaos describ'd	} P. 61. l. 890
Its Court	P. 205. l. 210
Answer to Satan's Speech there	P. 63. l. 959
Bounds sin & the Angels Fall, the Crea- tion, &c.	} P. 64. l. 989
State before it	P. 65. l. 998
A Bridge made over it from Hell- Gates to the World, at Adam's Fall,	} P. 152. l. 577
Vide Similies.	
Charity, its Praises, &c.	P. 376. l. 576 to l. 587
Chemos, or Peor (a fall'n Angel)	P. 16. l. 406, 412
Chembara	Vide Angels Coelestial, &c. Vide Similies

<i>Church, Hivlings in it, compar'd to the</i>	}	p. 103. l. 192
<i>Devil in Paradise</i>		
<i>Cocytus, a River of Hell</i>		p. 51. l. 579
<i>Comparisons</i>		<i>Vide Similies.</i>
<i>Conjugal Love, the Praises, &c. of it.</i>		p. 122. l. 750
<i>Distinguish'd from an Amour</i>		l. 761
<i>Consists in Reason, not Passion</i>		p. 240. l. 586
<i>Defin'd</i>		l. 589
<i>Express'd (on the Woman's part) in practice</i>		p. 222. l. 50
<i>In Words</i>		p. 377. l. 615
<i>A reciprocal Duty of it</i>		p. 256. l. 357
<i>Conjugal Obedience, Woman's Happiness, &c.</i>	}	p. 112. l. 635
<i>Conjugal Union, the Reason and Obligations of it</i>	}	p. 237. l. 494
		p. 276. l. 915
		p. 277. l. 961
<i>Conscience, God's Umpire in Man</i>		p. 76. l. 194
<i>The Terrors of it</i>	}	p. 97. l. 23
		p. 315. l. 842
<i>Laws to force it, Censur'd</i>		p. 374. l. 515
<i>No Infallability against it</i>		l. 529
<i>Constellations, their Appearances, Motion, &c.</i>	}	p. 89. l. 577
<i>Creation, the Universal, describ'd</i>	}	p. 93. l. 708
		p. 205. l. 221
<i>Creatures Animal in Paradise, describ'd</i>		p. 108. l. 340
<i>Have Degrees of Knowledge, and Reason</i>	}	p. 233. l. 369
<i>Their Discord, an Effect of Adam's Fall</i>		p. 310. l. 707
<i>Entry of Noah's Ark</i>		p. 349. l. 733
D		
<i>Dagon (a fall'n Angel)</i>		p. 18. l. 457
<i>Damn'd, the Vicissitudes of their Torments describ'd</i>	}	p. 51. l. 96
<i>David, his Throne why Eternal</i>		p. 367. l. 320
<i>Day and Night in Heav'n, describ'd</i>		p. 166. l. 4
<i>Death, and Sin, their Station at Hell</i>	}	p. 53. l. 648
<i>Gates before Adam's Fall</i>		
<i>Their Union</i>		p. 295. l. 249
<i>Make a Bridge from thence over</i>	}	p. 296. l. 282
<i>Chaos to the World, after it</i>		
<i>Meet Satan in his return to Hell from thence</i>	}	p. 297. l. 326

I N D E X.

<i>Their Journey thither, and Influences</i>	}	p. 300. l. 410
<i>describ'd</i>		
<i>Arrival at Paradise</i>		p. 306. l. 585
<i>After-Conduct in the World</i>		p. 307. l. 610
	<i>Vide Similies.</i>	
<i>Death describ'd</i>		p. 54. l. 666
<i>Answer to Satan at Hell Gates</i>		l. 688
<i>The Son of Satan and Sin</i>		p. 56. l. 727
<i>Its Birth</i>		p. 57. l. 777
<i>Answer to Sin on Adam's Fall</i>		p. 295. l. 264
<i>To Sin's Speech in Paradise</i>		p. 306. l. 596
	<i>Vide Similies.</i>	
<i>Death Natural; the Causes, and</i>	}	from p. 340. l. 466
<i>Variety of it, Described</i>		
<i>More terrible in view than reality</i>		p. 341. l. 493
<i>Of the Faithful a Sleep to Immorta-</i>	}	p. 340. l. 469
<i>lity</i>		
<i>The Gate of Life</i>		p. 371. l. 425
<i>Death Eternal considered</i>		to l. 434
<i>Deluge Universal</i>		p. 376. l. 571
<i>Despair, the Degrees and Colours of it</i>		p. 313. l. 808
<i>Devils, why Eternally excluded from Grace</i>		<i>Vide Noah</i>
<i>Discord censured</i>		p. 100. l. 108. 114
<i>Daughter of Sin, &c.</i>		p. 74. l. 129
<i>Dominion absolute in Man, over Men, and</i>	}	p. 48. l. 496
<i>Usurpation</i>		
<i>Dreams Illusive, &c. their Source</i>		p. 310. l. 707
<i>Natural</i>		p. 359. l. 64
<i>Divine</i>		p. 123. l. 799
		p. 136. l. 110
		p. 377. l. 611

E

<i>Eagle, a Bird of Prey, an effect of Adam's Fall</i>		p. 331. l. 185
<i>Earth and Heaven</i>	<i>Vide Heaven and Earth</i>	
<i>Earth, it's General Creation describ'd</i>	}	p. 93. l. 715
<i>The Shadow of Heaven</i>		
<i>Separated from the Waters, part of the</i>	}	p. 205. l. 231
<i>Third Day's Creation, describ'd</i>		
<i>The Fruits of it, &c.</i>		p. 152. l. 574
<i>It's Motion, or of the Heavens, Specu-</i>	}	p. 207. l. 276
<i>lations thereon censur'd</i>		
<i>It's praises</i>		p. 208. l. 313
		p. 223. l. 70
		p. 248. l. 99

I N D E X.

<i>The Centre of the Creation</i>	p. 248. l. 107
<i>Deſtruction by Noah's Flood deſcrib'd</i>	p. 349. l. 743
<i>Reſtitution after it</i>	p. 353. l. 832
<i>An univerſal Para-diſe at the Meſſiah's coming to Judgement</i>	p. 372. l. 463

Vide World.

<i>Eden, the Country bounded</i>	p. 104. l. 210
<i>Eden, the Garden of it.</i>	<i>Vide Para-diſe.</i>
<i>Egypt, the Plagues of, it deſcrib'd</i>	p. 362. l. 173
<i>Election aſſerted</i>	p. 76. l. 183
<i>Elements, &c. ſubſiſt on each other</i>	p. 146. l. 415
<i>Enoch, his Story and Tranſlation</i>	p. 347. l. 664 p. 348. l. 700

Vide Adam and Eve.
Vide Innocence.
Vide Similies.

Eve and Adam

Eve, particularly deſcrib'd, Characteriz'd, &c.

p. 120. l. 712
p. 145. l. 379
p. 236. l. 470
p. 237. l. 482
p. 239. l. 546
p. 240. l. 596
p. 257. l. 386
p. 259. l. 431
p. 260. l. 457
p. 261. l. 489
p. 262. l. 538
p. 265. l. 603
p. 274. l. 896

Answer to Adam's Diſcourſe on the Prohibition of the Tree of Knowledge } p. 111. l. 440

Recounts her firſt View of the Creation, Adam, &c. } l. 449

Answer to him at Night } p. 118. l. 635

To him waking her (relates her Dream the Subject of Satan's firſt Illuſive Temptation) } p. 133. l. 27

Weeping deſcrib'd } p. 137. l. 129

Attending the Entertainments of Raphael } p. 147. l. 443

Her formation from Adam } p. 236. l. 460

Behaviour on View of him, &c. } p. 237. l. 500

I N D E X.

D iscourse with him preceding the Temptation (she preva- ling on her own Sufficiency, and his Fondness)	}	from p. 251. l. 205
		to p. 257. l. 384
A nswer to Satan (in the Serpent)		p. 263. l. 552
T he Discourse (Satan Tempting her to Eat the forbidden Fruit) con- tinued	}	to p. 269. l. 732
S oliloquy before her Eating it		l. 745
P lucks and Eats		p. 271. l. 780
S oliloquy after it		l. 795
R esolution to Tempt Adam		p. 272. l. 830
S peech to him thereon		p. 273. l. 856
R epl ^y to his Answer, resolving to die with her	}	p. 277. l. 960
B ehaviour thereon		p. 278. l. 990
G ives him the Fruit		l. 995
R epeats the Transgression with him		l. 1005
I s incited by him to carnal fruition (the first effect of it)	}	p. 178. l. 1014
		p. 179. l. 1035
T he place, &c. described		l. 1037
A nswer to him (accusing her as the Aggressor) imputes it to his Indulgence	}	p. 283. l. 1142
A nswer to God (the Son) calling her to Judgment (accuses the Serpent)		p. 292. l. 1159
T he Sentence pronounced on her Behaviour, and Speech to Adam's		p. 293. l. 1192
R epulse of her, and her offers of Consolation (accuses her self)	}	p. 317. l. 909
A fter-Behaviour thereon		p. 318. l. 937
R eply to his Answer (advises to die by their own Hands)	}	p. 319. l. 966
T o him, Hailing her the Mother of Mankind		p. 330. l. 1162
S oliloquy, lamenting the threatened Expulsion from Paradise	}	p. 333. l. 1268
S peech to him on quitting it (Affec- tion, Conjugal Resolutions, and Con- solation on the Promise of the Messiah		p. 377. l. 619
		Vide Adam. Vide Similies

I N D E X.

<i>Evening describ'd</i>	p. 116. L. 598
<i>Evil---in thought unapproved,--- blameless</i>	p. 136. L. 117
<i>Experience---a Guide to Wisdom</i>	p. 271. L. 107

F

<i>Faith, unnecessary Endeavour to approve it, Suspicious</i>	} p. 283. L. 1139
<i>Faith, in Christ, with Works, Eternal Life</i>	} p. 371. L. 420
<i>Laws to force it censur'd</i>	p. 374. L. 515
<i>No Infallibility against it</i>	L. 529
<i>Fancy (a Faculty of the Soul) its Office</i>	p. 136. L. 100
<i>The Eye of the Soul</i>	p. 236. L. 460
<i>Fame (or Glory) the common Notion of it censur'd</i>	} p. 347. L. 688
<i>Fate, the Will of God</i>	p. 203. L. 170
<i>Fig-Tree, of which Adam, Eve, &c. made Aprons, describ'd</i>	} p. 281. L. 1161
<i>Firmament, the Second Day's Creation describ'd</i>	} p. 206. L. 261
<i>Fish, part of the fifth Day's Creation describ'd.</i>	} p. 211. L. 391
<i>Flaming Sword in Paradise on Adam's, &c. Expulsion thence describ'd</i>	} p. 371. L. 632
	Vide Similies.
<i>Flood Universal</i>	Vide Noah.
<i>Freedom, with the Loss of it, Virtue, &c. degenerates</i>	} p. 351. L. 797
<i>Free Grace asserted</i>	p. 75. L. 173
<i>Defin'd</i>	p. 77. L. 227
	p. 73. L. 95
	p. 140. L. 235
	p. 150. L. 520
<i>Free-Will asserted</i>	p. 242. L. 635
	p. 256. L. 350
	p. 288. L. 43
<i>Reason, the same</i>	} p. 73. L. 108
<i>The Image of God</i>	p. 256. L. 350
<i>Fruition carnal, the Passion of it censur'd</i>	p. 235. L. 440
	p. 240. L. 579

INDEX.

G

- Gabriel**, (the Archangel) chief of the }
Guardian Angels of Paradise) his } p. 115. l. 443
Station, &c. describ'd.
- Inform'd by Uriel of Satan's Descent there* l. 561
Undertakes to detect him. p. 116. l. 576
- His charge to Uzziel, Ithuriel, and* }
Zephon (three other of the Guar- } p. 123. l. 782
dian Angels.) thereon
- Speech to them, &c. on their taking,* }
and return with him } p. 125. l. 866
- To Satan thereon* p. 126. l. 877
- Reply to his Answer* p. 127. l. 902
- To another* p. 128. l. 946
- To another* p. 130. l. 1006
- Appointed one of the Chiefs of the Cele-* }
stial Army, against the Revolted } p. 167. l. 45
Angels
- His Process, &c. in the Battel* p. 177. l. 354
- Glory (or Fame) the common Notion of it* }
censured } p. 347. l. 688
- God the Father, contemplating his Works, &c.* p. 71. l. 56
- Speech to God the Son, on Satan's De-* }
sign on the Creation, Man, &c. } p. 72. l. 80
- Reply to his Answer* p. 75. l. 168
- Proposes the manner, &c. of fall'n* }
Man's Redemption } p. 76. l. 203
- Answer to the Son undertaking it.* p. 79. l. 274
- Decrees his Bodily Resurrection as God* }
and Man } p. 80. l. 303
- His the Father's Attributes, &c.* p. 82. l. 372
- Visibly seen in the Son* }
 } l. 383
 } p. 188. l. 680
- Charge to Raphael to warn Adam* }
against his Fall } p. 140. l. 224
- Speech to the whole Celestial Hierar-* }
chy, conven'd at the Inauguration of } p. 153. l. 600
God the Son
- To the Son on Satan's, &c. Re-* }
volt thereon } p. 156. l. 719
- Army against the Revolters describ'd* p. 266. l. 185

I N D E X

<i>Speech to Abdiel on his quitting their Party</i>	p. 166. l. 29
<i>Appoints Michael, and Gabriel Chiefs of the Cælestial Army</i>	p. 167. l. 44
<i>Battel, &c. between them, and the Revolters describ'd</i>	from p. 172. l. 202 to p. 188. l. 670
<i>Appoints God the Son to end it</i>	l. 680
<i>Chariot (the Father's) describ'd</i>	p. 190. l. 749
<i>Speech to the Son, resolving the Creation of the World</i>	p. 202. l. 139
<i>Commits the Work to him</i>	p. 203. l. 163
<i>His (the Father's) Omnipresence</i>	l. 168
<i>Goodness, Free Will, Fate</i>	p. 217. l. 588 l. 170 l. 173
<i>Institution of the Sabbath (by God the Father and Son) the Seventh after the Six Days of the Creation</i>	p. 217. l. 581
<i>The Solemnity of it describ'd</i>	l. 594
<i>Speech (the Father's) on the Guardian Angels return from Paradise upon Adam's, &c. Fall</i>	p. 258. l. 34
<i>Appoints the Son Judge of it</i>	l. 55
<i>Speech to the Cælestials on Sin and Death's entrance into the World thereby</i>	p. 307. l. 614
<i>Promise of their Dissolution, and a Renovation of Heaven and Earth</i>	p. 308. l. 633
<i>Charge to the Angels, touching the Changes in the Creation on the Fall</i>	l. 649
<i>Answer to the Son's Intercession on Adam's Repentance</i>	p. 324. l. 45
<i>Speech to the Cælestials, conven'd at his Decreeing his Expulsion from Paradise</i>	p. 327. l. 24
<i>To Michael thereon</i>	p. 328. l. 29
<i>God the Son, at the right Hand of the Father</i>	p. 72. l. 62
<i>His (the Father's) Effence, &c.</i>	p. 74. l. 138
<i>His Word, &c.</i>	p. 75. l. 169 p. 203. l. 163

I N D E X.

<i>Answer to him on Satan's Design on the Creation, Man, &c.</i>	} p. 74. l. 144
<i>On his proposing the manner, &c. of Man's Redemption</i>	} p. 77. l. 227
<i>Undertakes it</i>	l. 236
<i>Love to Man, and Filial Obedience</i>	p. 78. l. 266
<i>The Second Adam</i>	p. 79. l. 285
<i>His Merits alone imputative to Man</i>	} p. 370. l. 409
<i>His Resurrection, as God and Man Decreed</i>	} p. 80. l. 303
<i>Equal to the Father</i>	l. 305
<i>His (the Son's) Attributes</i>	p. 82. l. 383
<i>Answer to the Father on Satan's, &c. Revolt</i>	} p. 157. l. 733
	p. 82. l. 383
<i>The Image of the Father</i>	} p. 188. l. 680
	p. 190. l. 736
<i>The Messiah</i>	} p. 189. l. 718
	p. 195. l. 881
<i>Answer to the Father, appointing him to end the Battel between the Ce- lestial and Revolted Angels</i>	} p. 190. l. 723
<i>Undertakes it</i>	l. 730
<i>His Armour, Equipage, &c. describ'd</i>	p. 191. l. 760
<i>Speech to the Celestial Army</i>	p. 192. l. 800
<i>Solely attacks the Revoltors</i>	p. 193. l. 824
<i>Entirely Defeats them</i>	l. 838
<i>The Action and Defeat de- scrib'd</i>	} from p. 193. l. 838 to p. 195. l. 877
<i>Returns in Triumph</i>	l. 878
<i>His Person, Equipage, &c. in the Work of the Creation describ'd</i>	} p. 204. l. 192
<i>Reascent to Heav'n after it</i>	p. 216. l. 550
<i>Institution of the Sabbath (by God the Father, and Son) the Seventh after the Six Days Creation</i>	} p. 217. l. 581
<i>The Solemnity of it describ'd</i>	l. 594
<i>Answer (the Son's) to Adam on his Solitude in Paradise</i>	} p. 233. l. 369
<i>To his Reply</i>	p. 234. l. 398

I N D E X.

<i>To another (promises him a Consort)</i>	P. 235. L. 417
<i>Appointed by the Father Judge of</i>	} P. 288. L. 51
<i>Adam's Transgression (Fall)</i>	
<i>All Judgment committed to him</i>	L. 56
<i>The Mercy of it</i>	L. 58
<i>Answer to the Father thereon</i>	P. 289. L. 68
<i>Descent to Eden</i>	L. 85
<i>Call to Adam there</i>	P. 290. L. 103
<i>Reply to his Answer (accusing Eve)</i>	L. 119
<i>To his Reply</i>	P. 291. L. 144
<i>To Eve (accusing the Serpent)</i>	P. 292. L. 157
<i>Sentence pronounced by him on the</i>	} L. 163
<i>Serpent</i>	
<i>Explained</i>	L. 175
<i>On Eve</i>	P. 293. L. 182
<i>On Adam</i>	L. 192
<i>Cloaths them with Skins, &c.</i>	L. 197
<i>Ascend to the Father, and Intercessi</i>	} P. 294. L. 211
<i>on for them</i>	
<i>The Justice of his Sentence</i>	L. 224
<i>His Intercession on their Repentance</i>	P. 312. L. 714
<i>Vide Messiah.</i>	P. 325. L. 22.
<i>God, Purity of Adoration more accept-</i>	} P. 121. L. 736
<i>able to him, than Ritual</i>	
<i>All Good proceeds from, and Returns</i>	} P. 148. L. 469
<i>to him</i>	
<i>To be contemplated in the Works of the</i>	} P. 149. L. 508
<i>Creation</i>	
<i>Acts immediate</i>	P. 203. L. 176
<i>The Centre of Heav'n</i>	P. 248. L. 107
<i>His absolute Decrees</i>	P. 335. L. 311
<i>Omnipresence, Goodness, &c.</i>	P. 336. L. 335
<i>The fear of him, &c. with loss of</i>	} P. 351. L. 797
<i>Freedom, degenerates</i>	
<i>Particular Presence</i>	P. 358. L. 48.
<i>To obey, love, depend on his Provi-</i>	} P. 375. L. 557
<i>dence, &c. the Sum of Knowledge</i>	
<i>And Wisdom</i>	P. 376. L. 575
<i>Gospel how to be understood</i>	P. 374. L. 511
<i>Grace of God, Man its Object, and</i>	} P. 74. L. 129
<i>Devils eternally excluded from</i>	
<i>it, why</i>	

INDEX

<i>Man's long resistance of it alone exclusive</i>	p. 76. l. 198
<i>Repentance a Fruit of it</i>	p. 325. l. 22
<i>The Spirit of it, and Liberty Consorts</i>	p. 374. l. 525
<i>Gratitude exerted, a Discharge of its Debt</i>	p. 98. l. 55
<i>Gunpowder, Guns, &c. the Original</i>	p. 181. l. 478
<i>Invention ascrib'd to the Devil</i>	p. 182. l. 484
<i>Discharge describ'd</i>	p. 185. l. 584

H

<i>Heav'n, and Earth, their final Renovation by Fire</i>	p. 355. l. 898
	p. 375. l. 547
<i>After happiness therein</i>	p. 372. l. 463
	p. 375. l. 549
<i>Heav'n the Joys, &c. of it, describ'd</i>	p. 81. l. 344
<i>Its Gate</i>	p. 86. l. 501
	p. 141. l. 253
<i>Passage from thence to the World</i>	p. 87. l. 526
<i>It's General Creation</i>	p. 93. l. 716
<i>Visible, the Study of it how necessary</i>	p. 223. l. 66
<i>Speculations of its Motions, or the Earth's, censur'd</i>	l. 70
<i>How situated, Respecting the World, and Hell</i>	p. 297. l. 320
<i>Hell describ'd</i>	p. 5. l. 60
	p. 10. l. 228
	p. 51. l. 587
	p. 52. l. 618
<i>Its Gates</i>	p. 53. l. 645
<i>First opened by Sin</i>	p. 61. l. 871
<i>How situated, respecting Heav'n, and the World</i>	p. 297. l. 320
	<i>Vide Similies.</i>
<i>Hierarchies of Heav'n, before the Revolt of the fall'n Angels, describ'd</i>	p. 152. l. 579
<i>Hinnom, the Valley of, whence called Tophet, and Gehenna</i>	p. 16. l. 399
<i>Holy Ghost, its Effusion, &c. at the Creation.</i>	p. 203. l. 195
<i>Descent, &c. on the Apostles, and all Baptiz'd</i>	p. 373. l. 485
<i>Promis'd and given alike to all Believers</i>	p. 374. l. 518

I N D E X.

<i>Hospitality, an Incitation to it</i>	P. 141. L 316
<i>Hymn to Light</i>	P. 70. L 1
<i>To God the Father and Son</i>	P. 82. L 372
<i>On Conjugal Love</i>	P. 122. L 750
	P. 264. L 110
	P. 266. L 251
	P. 216. L 557
	P. 218. L 602
	P. 92. L 682
<i>Hypocrisy Visible to God alone</i>	P. 101. L 121
<i>Hypocrites, Satan the first</i>	P. 121. L 744
<i>Prebenders to Supernatural Purity, &c.</i>	

I

<i>Idolatry, the Original Rise of it assign'd</i>	P. 19. L 364
<i>Of the Post-Diluvian World</i>	P. 360. L 115
<i>Jealousy, the Lover's Hell</i>	P. 147. L 449
<i>Immortality of the Soul discuss'd</i>	P. 313. L 782
	P. 107. L 312
	P. 113. L 492
	P. 121. L 738
	P. 140. L 211
<i>Innocence, the State of it Describ'd</i>	P. 143. L 303
	P. 147. L 443
	P. 222. L 40
	P. 238. L 510
<i>Intellectual Beings, a Faculty of them</i>	P. 36. L 146
	P. 3. L 6
<i>Invocations, the Author's</i>	P. 71. L 51
	P. 152. L 1
	P. 345. L 20
	P. 20. L 512
<i>Jove (a fall'n Angel)</i>	
<i>Israelites, the Story of their Bondage,</i>	P. 362. L 163
<i>and deliverance from Egypt, related</i>	
<i>Of the Settlement of their Civil and</i>	P. 364. L 223
<i>Sacred Oeconomy in the Wilderness</i>	
<i>Establishment in Canaan</i>	P. 365. L 240
<i>Reason, Use, &c. of their Ritual Laws</i>	P. 366. L 280
<i>Government by Judges, and Kings</i>	P. 367. L 315
<i>Captivity in Babylon</i>	P. 368. L 335

I N D E X.

<i>Return from thence, after Dissen-</i>	}	<i>from</i> p. 368. l. 345
<i>sions, &c. to the Birth of the</i>		
<i>Messiah, &c.</i>		<i>to</i> p. 369. l. 359
<i>Is (a fall'n Angel)</i>		p. 18. l. 478
<i>Chaniel (a Guardian Angel of Paradise)</i>		p. 123. l. 788
<i>Describes Satan's first Attempt on Eve</i>	}	p. 124. l. 810
<i>there</i>		

K

<i>Knowledge of Good and Evil, the</i>	}	p. 104. l. 220
<i>True of it, how Situated</i>		
<i>Describ'd</i>		p. 265. l. 626
		p. 264. l. 975
<i>Forbidden to Adam</i>	}	p. 216. l. 342
<i>Satan's Encomium of it</i>		p. 234. l. 323
		p. 267. l. 672
<i>Eve's</i>	}	p. 271. l. 795
<i>Knowledge (or Opinion) the Result of</i>	}	p. 273. l. 863
<i>Reason and Fancy</i>		
		p. 236. l. 100
		p. 202. l. 126
<i>Without Restraint, Folly</i>	}	p. 227. l. 188
		p. 479. l. 560
<i>Of things necessary, Wisdom</i>		p. 227. l. 192
<i>Knowledge of future Events, the desire</i>	}	p. 350. l. 770
<i>of it Reprehended</i>		
<i>Its Sum, the Love, Fear, &c. of God</i>		p. 371. l. 557
<i>In Animal Creatures asserted</i>		p. 233. l. 369
		<i>Vide Similies.</i>

L

<i>Lethe, a River of Hell, describ'd</i>	p. 51. l. 582
<i>Medusa, the Guard of it</i>	p. 52. l. 610
<i>Leviathan d scrib'd</i>	p. 9. l. 201
<i>Liberty, with the Loss of it, Vertue, &c.</i>	} p. 351. l. 797
<i>degenerates</i>	
<i>Adam's Fall; the first Cause of it</i>	p. 359. l. 82
<i>Liberty, the same with Reason</i>	l. 83
<i>Life, the Tree of it describ'd</i>	p. 104. l. 218
<i>Where Situated</i>	p. 247. l. 69
<i>Life long, by Temperance</i>	p. 342. l. 930
<i>The great Rule of it respecting it self</i>	p. 343. l. 553

I N D E X.

<i>Light, Hymn to it</i>	p. 70. l. 1.
<i>The first Day's Creation, describ'd</i>	p. 206. l. 243
<i>Lightning how produced</i>	p. 322. l. 1073
<i>Limbo, or Fools Paradise, where</i>	p. 86. l. 495
<i>Lion, a Beast of Prey, an effect of</i>	} p. 331. l. 117
<i>Adam's Fall</i>	
<i>Love Conjugal, its Praises</i>	p. 122. l. 750
<i>Distinguish'd from that of an Amour</i>	l. 763
<i>Love consists in Reason, not Passion</i>	p. 240. l. 586
<i>Defin'd</i>	l. 589
<i>In Spirits Celestial, the Expression of</i>	} p. 241. l. 620
<i>it, what, and how</i>	
<i>Smiles, the Food of Love</i>	p. 252. l. 239
<i>Founded in Reason, one end of Hu-</i>	} p. 253. l. 241
<i>man Life</i>	
<i>Lucifer, Satan, why so called</i>	} p. 301. l. 425 Vide Satan.
<i>Lust Carnal, the first Effect of Adam's,</i>	
<i>&c. Fall</i>	} p. 278. l. 1011
<i>The Solace of it</i>	
	p. 279. l. 1042

M

<i>Mammon (a fall'n Angel)</i>	p. 25. l. 678
<i>His Speech in the Council call'd by</i>	} p. 39. l. 229
<i>Satan after their Fall</i>	
<i>Man fall'n the Object of Grace, why</i>	p. 74. l. 130
<i>His long Resistance of it alone exclusive</i>	p. 76. l. 198
<i>Redemption propos'd by God the Father</i>	l. 203
<i>Undertaken by God the Son</i>	p. 77. l. 227
<i>The Son's Merits alone Imputative to</i>	} p. 79. l. 290
<i>him, towards it, how</i>	
<i>Man Created to repair the Loss of the</i>	} p. 92. l. 667
<i>fall'n Angels</i>	
<i>His Creation (part of the sixth Day's)</i>	} p. 249. l. 143
<i>describ'd</i>	
<i>Dominion over the rest</i>	l. 530
<i>Love to Woman, how consistent with</i>	} p. 238. l. 567
<i>his Superiority</i>	
<i>The whole Creation in little</i>	p. 243. l. 109
<i>Angels, his Guardians</i>	p. 250 l. 154

I N D E X.

<i>his Superiority over the Woman given him by God</i>	p. 291. l. 145
<i>Pursuing his Appetites, Disfigures not God's Image, but his own</i>	p. 293. l. 195
<i>Conformity to the Divine Will, the true End of his Creation</i>	p. 342. l. 515
<i>Absolute Dominion over his Brethren (Men) an Usurpation</i>	p. 345. l. 603
<i>Given him by God only over the Creatures</i>	p. 359. l. 64
<i>Wishes Conjugal, the Modern censur'd</i>	L 67
<i>Respecting the Woman particularly</i>	p. 222. l. 57
<i>Edulæ, the Guard of Lethe</i>	p. 316. l. 888
<i>Mercy, God's first and last Attribute</i>	p. 52. l. 610
<i>Isaiah promised</i>	p. 74. l. 132
<i>The Promise Explained</i>	p. 293. l. 181
<i>His Birth, &c. and Kingdom, describ'd</i>	p. 369. l. 386
<i>Why called the Seed of the Woman</i>	p. 368. l. 359
<i>Life, and Passion</i>	p. 369. l. 376
<i>Resurrection, and Mission of the Apostles</i>	p. 371. l. 420
<i>Ascension, &c.</i>	p. 372. l. 451
<i>Coming to Judgment, &c.</i>	p. 375. l. 543
<i>Michael (the Arch angel) appointed one of the Chiefs of the Celestial Army against the revolted Angels</i>	p. 167. l. 44
<i>His Prowess, &c. in the Battle</i>	p. 174. l. 250
<i>Speech to Satan encountering him</i>	p. 175. l. 262
<i>The Combat describ'd</i>	p. 175. l. 296
<i>Wounds Satan</i>	p. 176. l. 320
<i>The Rebels defeated, incamps on the Field of Battel</i>	p. 179. l. 410
<i>Prepares to expel Adam, &c. from Paradise</i>	p. 329. l. 126
<i>His Appearance, &c. there describ'd</i>	p. 332. l. 238
<i>Speech to Adam thereon</i>	p. 333. l. 251
<i>Reply to Eve lamenting the threaten'd Expulsion</i>	p. 334. l. 286
<i>To Adam on the same Subject</i>	p. 336. l. 334
<i>Discovers to him (in Vision) what should happen to the time of the Flood</i>	from p. 339. l. 423 to p. 354. l. 867

INDEX.

<i>The Story of Cain and Abel</i>	p. 339 l. 429
<i>Death, with its Causes, and Variety</i>	p. 340. l. 466
<i>The State of the Antediluvian World</i> (in common)	} p. 343. l. 556
<i>The State of it (Civil, or in Propriety)</i>	
<i>The Story of Enoch</i>	p. 347. l. 664
<i>Of Noah</i>	p. 348. l. 700
<i>The Flood</i>	p. 349. l. 738
<i>God's Covenant to Destroy the World</i> no more by Water	} p. 354. l. 890
<i>Discovers to him (Relatively)</i> what should happen from the Flood to the general Resur- rection	
	from p. 357 l. 6
	to p. 375. l. 551
<i>The Patriarchal Government</i>	p. 357. l. 19
<i>Nimrod's Tyranny</i>	l. 24
<i>The Building, and Confusion, at Babel</i>	p. 358. l. 38
<i>The Story of Cham</i>	p. 360. l. 102
<i>Of Abraham, and the Patriarchs</i>	l. 113
<i>Of the Israelites Bondage in Egypt,</i> and Deliverance thence	} p. 362. l. 163
<i>Of the Settlement of their Civil,</i> and Sacred Oeconomy, in the Wil- derness, and Establishments in Ca- naan.	
	p. 264. l. 223
<i>Of their various Ritual Laws, their</i> Reason, Use, &c.	} p. 366. l. 280
<i>Of their Government by Judges and Kings</i>	
<i>Of their Captivity in Babylon</i>	p. 367. l. 325
	p. 368. l. 335
<i>Of their Return from thence,</i> after Dissentions, the Birth and Kingdom of the Mes- siah	} from p. 368. l. 345
	to p. 369. l. 371
<i>Of his Life, Passion, Resur- rection, Mission of the Apo- stles, Ascension, &c.</i>	} from l. 388
	to p. 372. l. 445
<i>Of the Mission of the Holy</i> Ghost, Gift of Tongues, Miracles, &c.	} from p. 373. l. 485
	to l. 504

INDEX.

Of the Apostles Successors (false Teachers, &c.) their Ambition, Innovations, &c. the effects of them, and the Messiah's coming to Judgment. } from p. 373 l. 507 to p. 375 l. 551

His Answer to Adam's Resolutions of future Obedience, &c. commands; advises him, and warns him to quit Paradise } p. 376. l. 575

Leads him and Eve out } p. 378. l. 637

Vide Similies.

Mind, the force of it p. 11. .254

Discourse, its Food p. 252. l. 237

Moloch (a fall'n Angel) p. 16. l. 392

His Speech in the Council call'd by Satan after their Fall } p. 33. l. 51

Desires Gabriel in the Battel between the Celestial and Revolted Angels } p. 177. l. 357

Is wounded by him, and flies p. 178. l. 360

Moon, suppos'd Inhabited by Translated Saints and middle Spirits } p. 95. l. 459

Its Office p. 94. l. 726

Rising describ'd p. 117. l. 606

The Spirit in it, Vapours not yet consolidated with its Body } p. 146. l. 478

Part of the fourth Day's Creation p. 209. l. 356

Receives its Light from the Sun p. 210. l. 375

Motion, Aspects l. 379

Moon and Stars, their Courses, Influences, &c. } p. 119. l. 661

Moon, and Planets, their noxious Motion, Aspects, &c. an effect of Adam's Fall } p. 308. l. 656

Morning in Heav'n describ'd p. 166. l. 12

Morning Natural, describ'd } p. 133. l. 20

Moses and Aaron their Mission to Egypt } p. 251. l. 192

Mulciber (a fall'n Angel) } p. 329. l. 133

} p. 342. l. 170

} p. 27. l. 740

INDEX.

N

<i>Night in Heaven, describ'd</i>	P. 154. L. 648
<i>Night, and Day in Heav'n, describ'd</i>	P. 166. L. 4
<i>Night Natural, describ'd</i>	} P. 117. L. 604 P. 122. L. 776 P. 134. L. 38 P. 246. L. 48 P. 315. L. 246
<i>At Adam's Fall</i>	
<i>Nimrod, (the first Monarch) his Tyranny describ'd, and censur'd</i>	} P. 357. L. 24
<i>Nisroc, (a fall'n Angel)</i>	P. 18c. L. 446
<i>His Answer to Satan in Council after their Defeat by the Celestial Angels</i>	} P. 181. L. 451
<i>Noah, his Reprehension of the Antediluvian World</i>	} P. 348. L. 719 P. 352. L. 808
<i>Building the Ark, &c.</i>	P. 349. L. 728
<i>Entering it, with his Family, the Creatures, &c.</i>	} L. 733
<i>The Flood describ'd</i>	} L. 738 P. 352. L. 824
<i>Its abatement, the Ark's resting, &c.</i>	P. 353. L. 841
<i>His Descent from it, the Appearance of the Rainbow, &c.</i>	} L. 861
<i>Noon describ'd</i>	P. 143. L. 300

O

<i>Obedience Conjugal, Woman's Happiness, &c.</i>	P. 118. L. 635
<i>Of Will. not Necessity, only acceptable to God</i>	} P. 150. L. 529
<i>Old Age Describ'd</i>	P. 342. L. 535
<i>Omens of Adam's Expulsion from Paradise</i>	P. 331. L. 182
<i>Opinion (or Knowledge)</i>	
	<i>Vide Knowledge or Opinion.</i>
<i>Orbs Celestial, and Terrestrial, Notions about their Motions, Appearance, &c. doubtful, and not necessary to the Improvement of Happiness, &c.</i>	} from p. 223. L. 70 to p. 226. L. 178

INDEX.

us (*a fall'n Angel*)
yris (*another*)

} p. 18. l. 478

P

adæmonium (*the Court of Hell*) de-
scrib'd

} p. 26. l. 710

Vide Similies.

aradise (*or the Garden of Eden*) de-
scrib'd

{ p. 101. l. 131
p. 104. l. 214
p. 142. l. 291
p. 215. l. 537
p. 231. l. 304
p. 259. l. 439

The Eastern Gate of it
Guarded by Gabriel

p. 115. l. 542
l. 549

The Tower of Adam and Eve there

p. 120. l. 690

The Parade, Watches, &c. of the
Guardian Angels in Paradise

{ p. 122. l. 778
p. 123. l. 782
p. 125. l. 861
p. 129. l. 977

The Hill there, from whence Micha-
el discovers to Adam in Vision,
what should happen to the time of
the Flood

{ p. 337. l. 377

Adam and Eve's Expulsion from Pa-
rise describ'd

} p. 377. l. 625

The Flaming Sword, &c. Guarding the
East Gate of it

} p. 378. l. 632

The Seat of it destroyed by Noah's Flood

p. 352. l. 829

Vide Similies.

Passions inordinate, an effect of Adam's
Fall

} p. 282. l. 1120

Patriarchal Government, from the
Flood, to Nimrod's Tyranny

} p. 357. l. 13 to 24

Patriarchs (Abraham's, &c.) their Story
related

} p. 360. l. 113

Peace, the Corruptions of it equal to the
Wastes of War

} p. 351. l. 783

Peor, or Chemos (*a fall'n Angel*)

p. 16. l. 412

Persecution in matters Spiritual
the Rise of it

{ from p. 373. l. 508
to p. 374. l. 533

Its Effects

l. 533

INDEX.

<i>Phlegeton (a River of Hell)</i>	P. 51. L. 580
<i>Plagues of Egypt describ'd</i>	P. 362. L. 173
<i>Planets and Moon, their noxious Motion,</i> <i>Aspects, &c. an effect of Adam's Fall</i>	P. 308. L. 656
<i>Pleasure Sensual, censur'd</i>	P. 345. L. 603
<i>Poles, North and South, perpetual Day</i> <i>under both, but for Adam's Fall</i>	P. 309. L. 668 L. 680
<i>Prayer, the Efficacy of its Spirit</i>	P. 325. L. 514
<i>Unavailable against God's absolute</i> <i>Decrees</i>	P. 329. L. 146 P. 339. L. 311
<i>Predestination defin'd</i>	P. 73. L. 111
<i>Priests occasion the first Dissension in the</i> <i>Jewish Church and State</i>	P. 300. L. 353
<i>Protopopxia, on Eve's eating the forbid.</i> <i>den. Fruit</i>	. 271. L. 782
<i>On Adam's</i>	P. 278. L. 1000

R

<i>Rainbow, its first appearance after</i> <i>Noah's Flood</i>	P. 353. L. 865
<i>Sign of God's Covenant to destroy the</i> <i>World no more by Water</i>	P. 355. L. 895
<i>Ramiel, Ariel, and Arioc (fall'n Angels)</i> <i>Vanquish'd</i>	P. 179. L. 369
<i>Raphael (the Angel) his Descent to Pa-</i> <i>radise to Warn Adam against his</i> <i>Fall</i>	P. 141. L. 247
<i>His Person described</i>	P. 142. L. 276
<i>Answer to Adam's Invitation to his</i> <i>Bower, and Entertainment there</i>	P. 145. L. 371 P. 146. L. 404
<i>Salutation of Eve</i>	P. 145. L. 388
<i>Discourse with Adam on va-</i> <i>rious Subjects</i>	from P. 148. L. 468 to P. 242. L. 651
<i>On the Perfection, Variety,</i> <i>and Gradual Oeconomy of</i> <i>the Creation</i>	from P. 148. L. 468 to P. 149. L. 503
<i>On Obedience, as a Duty of</i> <i>Choice, not Necessity</i>	from P. 150. L. 520 to P. 151. L. 543

<i>In the Revolt and Defeat of the fall'n Angels</i>	from	p. 152. l. 577
<i>hence Warns him against Satan's Temptations</i>	to	p. 195. l. 897
<i>vanquishes Asmodai, and puts him to flight</i>		l. 893
<i>On the Creation, &c.</i>	from	p. 178. l. 363
<i>On the Motion, Appearances, and Influences of the Celestial and Terrestrial Bodies.</i>	to	p. 201. l. 111
		p. 219. l. 640
<i>Reply to Adam's Account of himself on his Creation, &c.</i>	from	p. 221. l. 15
<i>Reply to his Question concerning Love, and the Expression of it in Spirits Celestial</i>	to	p. 226. l. 178
<i>Advice to Adam at parting, and Re-ascend to Heaven</i>		p. 239. l. 560
		p. 241. l. 620
		p. 242. l. 630
	<i>Vide Similies.</i>	
<i>Reason, and Free-Will, the same</i>		p. 73. l. 95
<i>The chief Faculty of the Soul</i>		to l. 108
<i>The being of the Soul, Discursive of Men, Intuitive of Angels</i>		p. 256. l. 350
<i>In Animal Creatures</i>		p. 136. l. 100
<i>The Law of Nature</i>		p. 149. l. 486
<i>Correlative with Liberty, with Virtue</i>		p. 233. l. 369
<i>Redemption of Man, propos'd by God the Father</i>		p. 266. l. 653
<i>Undertaken by God the Son</i>		p. 359. l. 83
<i>Repentance the Grace of God</i>		p. 360. l. 97
<i>Sincere Endeavours towards it acceptable</i>		p. 76. l. 203
<i>An Act of it</i>		p. 77. l. 227
<i>Its Efficacy</i>		p. 76. l. 185
<i>Reprobation, the State of it</i>		l. 191
<i>Reprobs, part of the sixth Day's Creation, describ'd</i>		p. 323. l. 1086
<i>Revolt, and Defeat of the fall'n Angels</i>		p. 325. l. 22
<i>Rimmon (a fall'n Angel)</i>		p. 76. l. 198
	from	p. 213. l. 475
	to	p. 152. l. 577
		p. 195. l. 892
		p. 18. l. 467

INDEX.

S

<i>Sabbath, its Institution, the seventh, after the Six Day's Creation</i>	} P. 217. L. 581
<i>The Solemnity of it describ'd</i>	L. 594
<i>Salvation, not only to the Sons of Abra- ham's Loins, but his Faith</i>	} P. 371. L. 449
<i>Satan (the Prince of the fall'n Angels) his Fall from Heaven</i>	} P. 4. L. 34
<i>Why so called</i>	} P. 5. L. 81
<i>Speech to Belzebub after their Fall</i>	} P. 154. L. 657
<i>Reply to Belzebub's Answer</i>	P. 5. L. 84
<i>Ascent from Hell</i>	P. 8. L. 157
	P. 9. L. 192
	L. 193
<i>His Stature, Look, &c. describ'd</i>	} P. 129. L. 985
	P. 156. L. 706
<i>Speech to Belzebub thereon</i>	P. 11. L. 242
<i>His Shield describ'd</i>	P. 12. L. 284
<i>His Spear</i>	L. 292
<i>Speech to the other fall'n Angels</i>	P. 13. L. 315
<i>His Standard describ'd</i>	P. 20. L. 531
<i>Speech to the fall'n Angels reimbattel'd</i>	P. 23. L. 622
<i>Calls a Council</i>	P. 28. L. 752
<i>Speech to them in Council</i>	P. 32. L. 11
<i>Undertakes an Attempt on the World</i>	} P. 46. L. 430
<i>(the Result of it)</i>	} P. 47. L. 465
<i>Ascent to the Gates of Hell</i>	P. 52. L. 629
<i>Speech to Death there</i>	P. 54. L. 681
<i>The Father of Sin, and Death</i>	P. 56. L. 727
<i>Answer to Sin's Speech</i>	L. 737
<i>To her Reply</i>	P. 59. L. 817
<i>Flight into Chaos</i>	P. 62. L. 917
<i>Arrival at the Court of Chaos</i>	P. 63. L. 951
<i>Speech there</i>	P. 64. L. 968
<i>Brought Sin and Death first into the World</i>	} P. 66. L. 1024
<i>Ascent to Light, &c.</i>	L. 1034
<i>Alights on the Convex of the World's outermost Orb</i>	} P. 83. L. 418

I N D E X.

<i>View of the World from the first Step</i>	}	p. 88. l. 540
<i>to Heav'n Gate</i>		
<i>Descent to it describ'd</i>		l. 561
<i>Stops at the Sun</i>		p. 89. l. 588
<i>Discovers Uriel, the Angel of it, there</i>		p. 90. l. 621
<i>Transforms himself to a Cherub</i>		p. 91. l. 634
<i>Speech to Uriel</i>		l. 654
<i>Deceives him</i>		p. 92. l. 681
<i>Is directed by him to the World</i>		p. 94. l. 724
<i>And Paradise</i>		l. 733
<i>Alights on Mount Niphates</i>		l. 739
<i>Soliloquy contemplating the Sun</i>		p. 98. l. 32
<i>The first Hypocrite</i>		p. 101. l. 121
<i>Arrives at Paradise</i>		l. 131
<i>Sits on the Tree of Life</i>		p. 103. l. 194
<i>Soliloquy on View of Adam and Eve</i>	}	p. 108. l. 358
<i>in Paradise</i>		
<i>Descends from the Tree of Life, and</i>	}	p. 110. l. 395
<i>assumes several Animal Shapes</i>		
<i>Listens to Adam's Discourse with</i>	}	l. 408
<i>Eve, on God's Prohibition of the</i>		
<i>Tree of Knowledge</i>		
<i>Soliloquy on the Subject of it</i>		p. 113. l. 505
<i>Resolves thence to tempt them to Dis-</i>	}	p. 114. l. 512
<i>obedience</i>		
<i>First attempt. in the assumed Shape</i>	}	p. 123. l. 799
<i>of a Toad, on Eve asleep</i>		
<i>Answer to Uriel and Zephon,</i>	}	p. 124. l. 827
<i>reprehending him thereon</i>		
<i>Reply to their Answer</i>		p. 125. l. 851
<i>Answer to Gabriel</i>		p. 126. l. 886
<i>Reply to his Answer</i>		p. 127. l. 925
<i>To another</i>		p. 129. l. 968
<i>The Inauguration of God the Son, the</i>	}	p. 154. l. 657
<i>Occasion of his Revolt</i>		
<i>Speech to the next Subordinate Angel</i>	}	p. 155. l. 673
<i>of his Party thereon</i>		
<i>The State of his Hierarchy before his</i>	}	p. 158. l. 756
<i>Fall, describ'd</i>		
<i>Speech to the Angels of his Hierarchy</i>	}	l. 772
<i>thereon</i>		

INDEX.

<i>Reply to Abdiel's Answer, on his</i>	}	p. 161. L 853
<i>Speech to the Hierarchy of his Party</i>		
<i>His Army describ'd</i>		p. 168. L 79
<i>His Port, and Post there</i>		p. 169. L 99
<i>Answer to Abdiel's Reply</i>		p. 171. L 130
<i>Battel between his, and the Ce-</i>	} from	p. 172. L 205
<i>lestial Army, describ'd</i>		p. 173. L 385
<i>His Prowess in the Battel</i>		p. 174. L 246
<i>Encounters Michael</i>		L 253
<i>Answer to Michael's Speech thereon</i>		p. 175. L 251
<i>The Combat describ'd</i>		L 296
<i>Wounded by him</i>		p. 176. L 320
<i>Carried off</i>		p. 177. L 335
<i>His Army defeated</i>		p. 178. L 386
<i>Retreats and calls a Council</i>		p. 179. L 414
<i>Speech in Council</i>		L 418
<i>Reply to Nisroc there</i>		p. 181. L 469
<i>Gives the Word for renewing the Battel</i>		p. 184. L 558
<i>Renew'd by his Army, and the</i>	} to	L 569
<i>second Battel describ'd</i>		p. 188. L 670
<i>Speech on the Celestial Army's Retreat</i>		p. 186. L 608
<i>His Army's intire Defeat and</i>	} from	p. 193. L 831
<i>Expulsion from Heav'n de-</i>		p. 195. L 877
<i>scrib'd</i>		
<i>Returns, from Compassing the Earth,</i>	}	p. 246. L 53
<i>to Paradise by Night, in a Mist, in</i>		
<i>in order to his Temptation</i>		
<i>His Circuit, &c. describ'd</i>		p. 247. L 62
<i>Soliloquy thereon</i>		p. 248. L 99
<i>Enters the Serpent</i>		p. 251. L 182
<i>View (in that Shape) of Eve</i>		p. 259. L 424
<i>Soliloquy thereon</i>		p. 260. L 473
<i>Behaviour to her</i>		p. 262. L 523
<i>Speech to her</i>		L 532
<i>Reply to her Answer</i>		p. 263. L 567
<i>The Discourse (his Temptation of</i>	} to	p. 269. L 732
<i>Eve to Eat the Forbidden Fruit)</i>		
<i>continued</i>		
<i>Leaves her after eating it</i>		p. 271. L 784

INDEX.

<i>His Sentence thereon (virtually) pronounc'd by God the Son</i>	}	p. 292. l. 171
<i>Returns to Hell to avoid his Presence in Paradise</i>		
<i>Meets Sin and Death upon their Journey to the World on Adam's, &c. Fall</i>	}	l. 345
<i>Answer to Sin's Speech</i>		
<i>Parts with them</i>		p. 299. l. 383
<i>Ascends his Throne at Pandæmonium</i>		p. 300. l. 410
<i>Speech to the fall'n Angels assembled there</i>	}	p. 301. l. 443
<i>Applauded with an Hiss</i>		
<i>He and they Transform'd to Serpents</i>		p. 302. l. 459
<i>Further punish'd with an Illusion of the Forbidden Fruit</i>	}	p. 303. l. 504
<i>Both annually continued</i>		
<i>Himself (the Serpent) drag'd in Chains at the Ascension of the Messiah</i>	}	p. 304. l. 510
<i>Diffolution (with the World) at his coming to Judgment</i>		
		p. 305. l. 549
		p. 306. l. 575
		p. 372. l. 453
		p. 375. l. 545

Vide Similies.

<i>Saturn (a fall'n Angel)</i>		p. 20. l. 512
<i>Scriptures how to be understood</i>		p. 374. l. 511
<i>Seasons, their Changes, respecting each Clime, an effect of Adam's Fall</i>	}	p. 309. l. 677
<i>Serpent describ'd</i>		
<i>After enter'd by Satan</i>		p. 251. l. 182
<i>His Sentence (formally) pronounc'd by God the Son, as the assum'd Tempter of Eve</i>	}	p. 261. l. 495
		p. 292. l. 163
		l. 175

Vide Similies.

<i>Sideral Blasts, &c. an effect of Adam's Fall</i>	}	p. 310. l. 692

SIMILIES.

<i>Adam and Eve, after their Fall——</i>	}	p. 282. l. 1115
<i>to the Americans, as first seen by Columbus</i>		

I N D E X

<i>Their Repentance---to Deucalion and Phrynia's Address to restore Hu- man Race after their Flood</i>	} P. 325. L 1
<i>Adam caressing Eve ---- to Jupiter with Juno (May-Showers)</i>	} P. 113. L 499
<i>His Address to her Sleeping----to Ze- phyrus breathing on Flora</i>	} P. 133. L 15
<i>Bower----to Pomona's Arbours</i>	P. 145. L 377
<i>Desires to know the Story of the Crea- tion, Prior to his own----to Thirst unallay'd, increasing</i>	} P. 200. L 66
<i>Awak'd after carnal Fruition, the first effect of his Fall----to Sampson</i>	} P. 280. L 1059
<i>Shorn by Dalilah</i>	
<i>Sorrow on the Vision of Noah's Flood ---to a Father's Mourning his Chil- dren all destroy'd in his View at once</i>	} P. 350. L 760
<i>Angels Celestial, the Spears (of the Guardians of Paradise)-- to Ears of Corn ripe for Reaping</i>	} P. 129. L 980
<i>Their March against Satan's Army--- to that of the Birds in Paradise to receive their Names from Adam</i>	} P. 168. L 72
<i>Their Hallelujahs---to the Sound of Seas</i>	P. 308. L 642
<i>(Appointed to expel Adam, &c. from Paradise) --- their Faces to a double Janus (four)</i>	} P. 329. L 128
<i>Their Eyes ---to those of Argus</i>	L 129
<i>Their Appearance there---to the An- gels appearing to Jacob in Mahana- im</i>	} P. 332. L 213
<i>--- To those in Dothan against the King of Assyria</i>	} L 216
<i>Their Mission--- to an Evening Mist</i>	P. 377. L 628
<i>Angels fall'n (or Infernal) --- to Autumnal Leaves</i>	} P. 13. L 302
<i>--- To floating Sea-Sedge after a Storm</i>	L 304
<i>Raising at Satan's Command---to Sen- tinals waking from Sleep on Duty</i>	} P. 14. L 331

I N D E X.

<i>Imbattelling against the Angels Cœlesti-</i> <i>al---to the Egyptian Plague of Lo-</i> <i>custs</i>	}	p. 14. l. 338
<i>--- To the Irruptions of the Northern</i> <i>Barbarians</i>	}	l. 351
<i>Their Disposition to Engage---to that of</i> <i>the Heroes of Antiquity</i>	}	p. 21. l. 549
<i>With them---the greatest Armies in</i> <i>all Ages since the Creation,---Pig-</i> <i>mies.</i>	}	p. 22. l. 573
<i>Themselves---to Oaks, or Pines: blasted</i>	}	p. 23. l. 612
<i>Their Searching, &c. for the Materi-</i> <i>als of Pandemonium---to Pioneers</i> <i>In:renching, &c.</i>	}	p. 25. l. 675
<i>Their manner of raising it---to the Wind</i> <i>of an Organ</i>	}	p. 26. l. 705
<i>Assembling thereat---to Bees</i>	}	p. 28. l. 768
<i>---- To Pygmies</i>		l. 780
<i>---- To Fairies</i>		l. 781
<i>Their Applause of Mammon's Speech</i> <i>in Council---to the Hollow Wind af-</i> <i>ter a Storm</i>	}	p. 41. l. 285
<i>Their rising from Council---to Thunder</i> <i>as a sign</i>	}	p. 47. l. 476
<i>Their Pleasure on the Result---to the</i> <i>Evening Sun after a foul Day</i>	}	p. 48. l. 488
<i>Their after various Pursuits, Passions,</i> <i>&c.---to the Olympick, or Pythian</i> <i>Games</i>	}	p. 49. l. 530
<i>---- To the Phenomena of Armies in</i> <i>the Clouds</i>	}	l. 533
<i>---- To Hercules on Oeta</i>		p. 50. l. 543
<i>Their Numbers composing Satan's Army</i> <i>against the Cœlestials---to the Stars</i>	}	p. 157. l. 745
<i>---- To the Dew-Drops</i>		l. 746
<i>Their Applause of Satan's Reply to</i> <i>Abdiel---to the sound of Deep</i> <i>Waters</i>	}	p. 162. l. 872
<i>Throng'd together after their Intire De-</i> <i>feat by God the Son---to a Herd of</i> <i>Goats</i>	}	p. 194. l. 856

INDEX.

<i>Their Retreat to Pandemonium from the Frontiers of Hell during Satan's Expedition to the World---</i>	}	p. 301. l. 431
<i>to the Tartar's Flight before the Russ-----and the Persian from the Turk-----wasting the intermediate Country</i>		
<i>Transformation to Serpents --to those sprung from the Gorgon's Blood, &c.</i>		
<i>Their Appearance on the Tree illusive of the Forbidden Fruit ---to the Snaky Hair of Magara (one of the Furies)</i>	}	p. 305. l. 558
<i>The Fruit---to the Apples of Sodom</i>		
<i>Chaos. Atoms, their Motion---to the Lybian Quicksands</i>	}	p. 62. l. 900
<i>Confusion there---to Storming a Town</i>		
<i>--To Heav'n and Earth (suppos'd) falling, &c.</i>		l. 920
<i>Death, and Sin, their making a Bridge over Chaos to the World-----</i>	}	p. 296. l. 289
<i>to Polar Winds, driving the Ice together in the (suppos'd) North-East Passage</i>		
<i>The work---to Neptune's fixing the Isle of Delos</i>		
<i>---To Xerxes making a Bridge over the Hellespont</i>	}	p. 297. l. 306
<i>Death's Instinct of Adam's Fall---to the flight of Birds of Prey to a Field of Battle</i>		
<i>His, and Satan's Crowns on each other-----To two Thunder-Clouds meeting</i>	}	p. 55. l. 714
<i>Eye---her Hair---to the Vines Tendrils</i>		
<i>Her Looks---to the first Blush of Morning</i>		p. 107. l. 305
<i>Her self---to Pandora</i>		p. 137. l. 122
<i>---To a Wood Nymph, or Venus</i>		p. 120. l. 713
<i>---To a Dryad, or Delia, (Diana)</i>		p. 145. l. 379
<i>---To Pales or Pomona</i>		p. 257. l. 387
<i>---To Ceres</i>		p. 258. l. 393
		l. 395

I N D E X.

- Her Temptation by Satan --- alluded to
by the Story of Ophion and Eury-
nome* } p. 306. l. 578
- Lying Sword in Paradise, on A-
dam's and Eve's Expulsion thence
--- to a Comet* } p. 378. l. 632
- It's Heat, &c. --- to the Lybian Air* l. 634
- tell --- to Mount Ætna (in Sicily)* p. 20. l. 230
- To the Bog, or Lake Serbonis (in
Palestine)* } p. 51. l. 592
- Knowledge, the Desires of it --- to a
Thirst unallay'd, increasing* } p. 200. l. 66
- Michael his Combate with Satan, --- to
two Planets (the Frame of Nature,
suppos'd, dissolv'd) rushing in op-
position to each other* } p. 176. l. 310
- Appearance to Expell Adam, &c.
from Paradise --- to a Man in a
Military Vest, &c.* } p. 332. l. 239
- Pandæmonium (or the Court of Hell)
it's sudden rise --- to an Exhalation* } p. 26. l. 710
- Paradise, the Air of it --- to the Efflu-
via from Arabia Felix, at Sea* } p. 102. l. 159
- It's self --- to the Field of Enna (in Sicily)* p. 105. l. 268
- To the Grove of Daphne, &c. (in Thessaly)* p. 106. l. 272
- To the Isle of Nysa (where Bac-
chus was brought up)* } l. 275
- To Mount Amara (in Ethiopia)* l. 280
- To the Gardens of Adonis* p. 259. l. 439
- Of Alcinous* l. 440
- Of Solomon* l. 442
- Raphael, his view of the World in his
descent from Heav'n to Paradise ---
to that of the Moon through an Optic
Glass* } p. 141. l. 261
- Of Delos, or Samos from the Cy-
clades (Isles)* } l. 264
- Himself to a Phanix* p. 142. l. 271
- To Mercury* l. 285
- Satan, --- to Briareus, Typhon, and the
Leviathan* } p. 9. l. 199. 201
- To the Sun rising in a Mist* p. 22. l. 594

I N D E X.

-- In Eclipse	p. 12. L. 556
-- To the longest train of a Comet	p. 15. L. 707
--- To Mount Teneriff, or Atlas	p. 129. L. 385
His Shield --- to the Moon	p. 12. L. 224
His Spear ---- to a Muſt	L. 292
His Standard ---- to a Meteor	p. 20. L. 317
The Phenomenon of his Aſcent to Hell	} p. 53. L. 46
Gates --- to a Fleet in the Offin	
His, and Death's Frowns on each other	} p. 55. L. 714
--- to two Thunder-Clouds meeting	
Flight to the Court of Chaos --- to a	} p. 63. L. 943
Gryphon's in the Wilderneſs	
Towards Heav'n --- to (the Ship) Argo,	} p. 65. L. 1016
through the Thracian Boſphorus	
--- To Uliſſes's Voyage between Scylla	} L. 1019
and Charybdis	
Arrival at Light &c. ---- to a Weather-	} p. 66. L. 1043
beaten Veſſel towards Port	
--- On the Convex of the World's Outermoſt	} p. 84. L. 431
Orb --- to a Vulture ſeeking his Prey	
Fiſt View of the World --- to a Court's	} p. 88. L. 543
Casual Proſpect (after a Dangerous	
Journey) of a new Country or City	} L. 568
--- Of the Stars Orbs --- to the Helpe-	
rian Gardens, &c.	} p. 89. L. 638
Appears in the Sun's Orb --- to a ſpot	
in it differing from all Aſtrono-	} p. 97. L. 14
mical Obſervations	
Meditation on his intended Attempt on	} p. 103. L. 183
the World --- to a Gun recoiling	
In Paradise --- to a Wolf preying on a fold	} L. 183
--- To a Thief breaking in at a Houſe Top, &c.	
--- To a Tyger in View of a brace of Fawns	} p. 110. L. 403
Deſtroyed by Ithuriel there --- to Gun-	
powder taking Fire.	} p. 124. L. 814
Reprehended by Zephon ---- to a Steed	
rein'd, in a Fret	} p. 125. L. 857
His Army againſt the Coeſtials in Num-	
ber --- to the Stars	} p. 157. L. 745
--- To the Dew Drops	
	L. 746

I N D E X.

<i>Their Applause of his Reply to Abdiel</i>	}	p. 162. l. 372
<i>--- to the Sound of deep Waters</i>		
<i>Himself recoiling on a Blow received from Michael --- to a Mountain sinking by an Earthquake</i>	}	p. 172. l. 193
<i>Hu Combate with Michael --- to two Planets (the Frame of Nature suppos'd dissolv'd) rushing in Opposition to each other.</i>		
<i>Vicro (in the Serpent) of Paradise and Eve there --- to a Citizen's taking the Air in the Country from his home Confinement</i>	}	p. 259. l. 445
<i>Shape (transform'd to a Serpent) on his return to Hell after the Temptation --- to the Serpent Python</i>		
<i>His tempting Eve --- alluded to by the Story of Ophion and Eurynome</i>	}	p. 306. l. 578
<i>Serpent, that enter'd by Satan --- to those Hermione and Cadmus were transform'd to</i>		
<i>--- To that assum'd by Æsculapius</i>		l. 506.
<i>--- To those by Jupiter Ammon, and Capitoline</i>	}	l. 508
<i>His Motion, Wreathings, &c. --- to the working of a Ship in shifting Winds, &c.</i>		
<i>His Crest (preceeding Eve to the forbidden Tree) --- to an Exhalation flaming (Will it's wisp)</i>	}	p. 266. l. 634
<i>His Address introducing the Temptation --- to that of an Orator of the Athenian or Roman Common Wealths</i>		
<i>Sin, her Middle Parts --- to the (suppos'd) Dogs of Scylla</i>	}	p. 53. l. 659
<i>--- Of the Night: H g</i>		
<i>Spears --- to Ears of Corn ripe for reaping</i>		p. 121. l. 980
<i>Stars, their Orbs --- to the Hesperian Gardens, &c.</i>	}	p. 88. l. 568
<i>Sun, his Course turn'd at Adam's, &c. eating the forbidden Fruit --- as at the Banquet of Thyestes</i>		
	}	p. 309. l. 688

I N D E X.

Uriel, his Descent from the Sun on Pa- radise --- to a shooting Star	}	p. 115. L 555
Waters, their flux into Seas, &c. on the Creation --- to Drops on Dust		p. 207. L 290
--- To Armies forming themselves on sound of Trumpet	}	L 294
Sin, and Death		Vide Death and Sin.
Sin describ'd		p. 53. L 630
Her Speech to Satan, and Death, at Hell Gates	}	p. 56. L 727
Reply to Satan		L 747
Her Birth		p. 57. L 752
Reply to his Answer		p. 60. L 850
Opens Hell-Gates to him		p. 61. L 871
Speech to Death on Adam's Fall		p. 294. L 235
To Satan, (meeting him returning to Hell,) on her and Death's Jour- ney to the World after it	}	p. 298. L 334
To Death on their arrival at Paradise		p. 306. L 191
Reply to Death's Answer		p. 307. L 602
		Vide Similies.
Sin Originall, Lust Carnall the first effect of it	}	p. 278. L 1011
It's Solace		p. 279. L 1042
Slavery, original of it the inordinancy of the Passions	}	p. 359. L 86
The Justice of it, as consequential on Deviating from Vertue, &c.		p. 360. L 97
Soul, its Faculties		p. 136. L 100
Its Immortality discuss'd		p. 313. L 782
Spirits their Essence, and Power	}	p. 17. L 423
Their invisible Existence on Earth		p. 29. L 789
The Elect, their Hymn to God the Fa- ther, and Son.	}	p. 119. L 677
		p. 82. L 372
Material, &c. Faculties in Spirits	}	p. 146. L 454
Vital, Animal, and Intellectual Spirits		p. 147. L 431
Progressive from Material Nutrition	}	p. 149. L 482

I N D E X.

<i>Their Existence in Life, Intellect, Shape,</i>	}	p. 177. l. 344
<i>&c. defin'd</i>		
<i>bring perpetual within the Tropics,</i>	}	p. 309. l. 678
<i>but for Adam's Fall</i>		
<i>Stars, their Places, Appearances, &c.</i>		p. 88. l. 565
<i>Fed by the Air</i>		p. 146. l. 417
<i>Part of the Fourth Day's Creation</i>		p. 209. l. 357
<i>Receive their Light from the Sun</i>		p. 210. l. 364
		<i>Vide Similies.</i>
<i>Stars, and Moon, their Courses, Influ-</i>	}	p. 119. l. 661
<i>ences, &c.</i>		
<i>Storms, &c. an Effect of Adam's Fall</i>		p. 310. l. 695
<i>Styx, a River of Hell</i>		p. 51. l. 577
<i>Sun, its Appearance, Place, and Power</i>		p. 89. l. 571
<i>Brightness Describ'd</i>		l. 591
<i>Orb fed by Exhalations from the Groffer</i>		p. 147. l. 423
<i>Part of the Fourth Day's Creation</i>		p. 209. l. 354
<i>The Fountain of Light</i>		p. 210. l. 364
	}	p. 108. l. 352
		p. 114. l. 539
		p. 116. l. 590
		p. 242. l. 630
		p. 290. l. 92
<i>Setting Describ'd</i>		
<i>Its Annual Course, producing intense</i>	}	p. 308. l. 651
<i>Heat and Cold, an Effect of A-</i>		
<i>dam's Fall</i>		
<i>Its Oblique Motion from the Equi-</i>	}	p. 309. l. 671
<i>noctial, from the same Cause.</i>		
		<i>Vide Similies</i>

T

<i>Teachers (false) of the Christian Re'i-</i>	}	p. 373. l. 508
<i>gion Describ'd</i>		
<i>Temperance, the Effect of it long Life</i>		p. 342. l. 530
<i>Thammuz, or Adonis (a fall'n Angel)</i>		p. 17. l. 446
<i>Thunder, an effect of Adam's Fall</i>		p. 309. l. 666
<i>Time, respecting Eternity, defin'd</i>		p. 152. l. 580
<i>Titan (a fall'n Angel)</i>		p. 20. l. 510
<i>Traditions censur'd</i>		p. 373. l. 511

INDEX.

<i>Tree of Life</i>	<i>Vide Life.</i>
<i>Of Knowledge</i>	<i>Vide Knowledge.</i>
<i>Truth, suffering for it, Fortitude, &c.</i>	p. 375. l. 569
<i>Tyranny, Nimrod's, describ'd, and censur'd</i>	p. 357. l. 24
<i>Origine of it, the Inordinancy of the Passions</i>	p. 359. l. 16
<i>No Excuse of the Tyrant (tho' Just in Consequence on the Subject)</i>	p. 360. l. 95
<i>Tyrants, their Plea for Conquest, &c. compar'd with Satan's first Attempt on Man</i>	p. 110. l. 190
<i>Twilight describ'd</i>	p. 116. l. 191

V

<i>Vacuity, God's Omnipresence an Argument against it</i>	p. 203. l. 168
<i>Valour (or Heroic Virtue,) the common Notion of it censur'd</i>	p. 347. l. 688
<i>Virtue, &c. with loss of Freedom degenerates</i>	p. 351. l. 797
<i>Reason, and Virtue, the same</i>	p. 360. l. 98
<i>Union Conjugal</i>	<i>Vide Conjugal Union.</i>
<i>Uriel (the Angel of the Sun)</i>	p. 90. l. 622
<i>His Answer to Satan</i>	p. 93. l. 694
<i>Directs him to the World</i>	p. 94. l. 724
<i>And Paradise</i>	l. 733
<i>Descends thither himself, and informs Gabriel of Satan's Predecessor</i>	p. 115. l. 555
<i>Encounters Adramelec, (a fall'n Angel) Wounds, and puts him to Flight</i>	l. 561
	p. 178. l. 363
	<i>Vide Similies.</i>
<i>Uzziel (a Guardian Angel of Paradise)</i>	p. 123. l. 782

W.

<i>War, Property the Original of it</i>	p. 346. l. 638
<i>The Corruptions of Peace equal to its Waste</i>	p. 351. l. 783

INDEX.

- Waters separated from the Earth, part of the Third Day's Creation* } p. 207. l. 282
Vide Similies.
- Wife, her Duty in Danger, Distress, &c.* } p. 253. l. 267
 } p. 334. l. 290
- Wind, the Tempestuous Power of it, and Effect of Adam's Fall* } p. 309. l. 664
 } p. 310. l. 695
- Wisdom, the Sum of it, the Love, &c. of God* } p. 376. l. 575
- Wolves, (or false Teachers) the Apostles Successors describ'd* } p. 373. l. 507
- Woman, Conjugal Obedience her Happiness, &c.* } p. 118. l. 635
- Man's Love towards her, how consistent with his Superiority* } p. 239. l. 567
 } p. 252. l. 232
- Two of her Loveliest Qualities*
- The Effect of leaving her to her own Will* } p. 284. l. 1182
- His Superiority over her, given him by God* } p. 291. l. 145
 } p. 293. l. 195
- A Novelty, Defect of Nature, &c. (Sarcastically)* } p. 316. l. 888
- The advantage of her Social, over her Artificial Accomplishments* } p. 345. l. 614
- Every way the Cause of Man's Misery (Sarcastically)* } p. 346. l. 632
- Works, with Faith in Christ, Eternal Life* } p. 371. l. 420
- World, the Convex of its outermost Orb describ'd* } p. 83. l. 418
 } p. 84. l. 444
 } p. 85. l. 463
- By whom possess'd (Sarcastically)*
- The Creation of the World, committed by God the Father, to God the Son* } p. 203. l. 163
 } p. 205. l. 218
- Describ'd*
- Situation of it, respecting Heaven and Hell* } p. 297. l. 320
- Vide Earth.*

INDEX.

Z.

Zephon (<i>a Guardian Angel of Paradise</i>)	p. 123.	l. 781
Reprehends Satan's first Attempt on	}	p. 124. l. 823
Eve there		
Reply to his Answer		l. 834
Zophiel (<i>a Cherub</i>)	p. 183.	l. 535
Alarms the Cælestial Army, on the	}	l. 537
approach of Satan's to renew the		
Battel		

FINIS.

ERRATA.

PAGE 15. lin. 388. read *Sanctuary*. P. 53. l. 644. r. *horrid*. After p. 91. for p. 62. fac. 92. P. 185. for l. 566. fac. 596. After p. 297. for p. 278. fac. 298. P. 300. l. 393. for *while* r. *will*. P. 303. l. 481. for *Fame* r. *Fame*. After p. 334. for p. 337. fac. 335. P. 370. l. 410. for *though* r. *through*.



